Contents

UNIT 1
Habitual Actions
Lesson 1: At Home 2
Lesson 2: In the Shop 7
Lesson 3: On Holiday 11
Lesson 4: Revision and Test 14
Answer Key 18

UNIT 2
Past Actions
Lesson 1: Yesterday 22
Lesson 2: A Writer 26
Lesson 3: A Story 29
Lesson 4: Revision and Test 32
Answer Key 35

UNIT 3
Future Action
Lesson 1: Hasan’s Bike Breaks 40
Lesson 2: Jamil’s Big Brother is Getting Married 44
Lesson 3: A Busy Day 47
Lesson 4: Revision and Test 51
Answer Key 53

UNIT 4
Expressing Ability/Inability
Lesson 1: Moni 56
Lesson 2: Mukta 59
Lesson 3: Heera 62
Lesson 4: Revision and Test 65
Answer Key 68

UNIT 5
Making Requests/Asking and Giving Permission
Lesson 1: Planning a Picnic 72
Lesson 2: Nishu and Her Bag 76
Lesson 3: Patenga Beach 49
Lesson 4: Revision and Test 83
Answer Key 84
Lesson 5 : Tenses 145
Lesson 6 : Subjects-Verb Agreement 151
Lesson 7 : The Infinitive 154
Lesson 8 : Participle 156
Lesson 9 : The Gerund 158
Answer Key 159

UNIT 12
Adjective
Lesson 1 : What is an Adjective 161
Lesson 2 : Kinds of Adjectives 162
Lesson 3 : Adjectives : Degrees of Comparison 167
Lesson 4 : Structures with Comparisons 170
Answer Key 171

UNIT 13
Adverbs
Lesson 1 : What is an Adverb 173
Lesson 2 : Kinds of Adverbs 174
Lesson 3 : Position of Adverbs 175
Lesson 4 : Comparison of Adverbs 176
Answer Key 178

UNIT 14
Informal Letters
Lesson 1 : Reza and Paul 179
Lesson 2 : Asma and her Aunt 183
Lesson 3 : Arif and his Uncle 185
Lesson 4 : Miscellaneous 188
Answer Key 190

UNIT 15
Translation
Lesson 1 : Using Nouns, Pronouns, Adjectives, Verbs, Adverbs, Prepositions and Conjunctions 191
Lesson 2 : Introducing Tenses 194
Lesson 3 : Types of Sentences 196
Lesson 4 : Passages for Practice 197
Lesson 5 : More Passages for Practice 199
Answer Key 201
ENGLISH ONE  

Self Learner

Objectives:

1. *D‡Ïk¨mg~n* (Objectives): eB‡qi cÖwZwU 

2. *msw¶ß weeiY* (Overview): cÖwZwU 

3. *co–b, wPš—v Ki”b Ges DËi w`b* (Read, think and answer) 

4. *cÖkœmg~n* (Questions): 

5. *kã fvÛvi mg”×Ki”b* (Develop Vocabulary) 

6. *Bsti ¬Z K_v ejv* (Speak in English) 

7. *Bsti ¬Z tj Lw Af ’vm Ki”b* (Writing habit in English) 

Overview of the text:

- **Objectives**: The text outlines the goals and learning outcomes for a self-learner engaging in English One. 
- **Overview**: It provides a brief introduction to the lesson, setting the stage for the activities that follow. 
- **Read, think and answer**: This section likely involves reading passages and answering questions to enhance comprehension and critical thinking. 
- **Questions**: Specific questions are posed to encourage active engagement and deeper understanding of the material. 
- **Develop Vocabulary**: This part focuses on expanding vocabulary through practice exercises. 
- **Speak in English**: It may include exercises or scenarios for speaking practice. 
- **Writing habit in English**: Practice in writing English, possibly including different types of writing like paragraphs, letters, and reports. 

The text seems to be structured to support independent learning, with a focus on multiple skills and activities, ensuring a comprehensive learning experience.
8. Check your answer key: cÖ‡kœvËi wgwj‡q †`Lyb

9. Necessary instructional sign meaning

10. (Attend Tutorial Class):

11. Enjoy Radio and TV Programme

12. Join Group Discussion

13. Write letters

14. Find Sample Questions and practise
Dear Learner

We are delighted that you have got yourself admitted into Bangladesh Open University. We welcome you to the English book for Secondary School Certificate (SSC) course. Hope you will find your study useful and enjoyable.

Indeed, learning English may be very interesting if you are sincere. We have two English books for the SSC course. ENGLISH ONE is introduced for the 1st year students. This book contains a variety of prose pieces, short stories and different grammatical items. These will help you improve different skills like listening, speaking, reading and writing in English. We think you will be capable of writing letters, paragraphs, short messages, short reports and understanding news of TV, Radio and daily newspapers in English at the end of this course.

The 1st year syllabus includes all units of lessons of the text book. You will find a sample question paper at the end of the text book. This book is written on the basis of open and distance learning (ODL) system. It is prepared in an easy manner so that learners can realise it without the help of teachers.

If you find a difficult word, please do not hesitate to consult a dictionary. We are sure that you will do better in the examination if you solve questions of the text book. So go ahead and start studying. We hope you will find your study fruitful and successful.

Wish you all the best.

Rafsan Mahmud
Habitual Actions

Objectives

On Completion of this unit you will be able to –

• talk about habitual actions
• use frequency adverbs such as 'always', 'usually' etc.
• make statements, questions and answers with habitual actions
• answer some questions about yourself and your family using present simple tense.

Overview

Lesson 1: At Home

Lesson 2: In the Shop

Lesson 3: On Holiday

Lesson 4: Revision and Test

Answer Key
At Home

LESSON 1

Look at the picture and read the passage silently.

ছবি দেখুন এবং passage টি নীরবে পড়ুন।
Hasan is a shopkeeper. He always gets up at 6 am. Then he takes his cows into the field. Hasan's younger brother Rafiq gets up at 7. Hasan and his father eat breakfast together. Rafiq is always late for breakfast. He eats breakfast with his mother.
Hasan usually goes to his shop by bicycle. Rafiq goes to school at 8. Usually Hasan and Rafiq leave home together.

Read each sentence given below and put the right number of the picture in A into the box.

1 Hasan gets up at 6.
2 Hasan goes to his shop by bicycle.
4 Hasan takes their cows into the field.
5 Hasan and Rafiq leave home together.
6 Rafiq goes to school at 8.
7 Hasan and his father eat breakfast together.

Read and Note.

Shopkeeper : দোকানদার
always : সব সময়
Hasan always gets up at 6. I always brush my teeth (দাঁত প্রার্থ) before I go to bed.
get up : ঘুম থেকে ওঠা
breakfast : নাশ্তা
together : একত্রে
usually : সাধারণত, সচরাচর
Hasan usually goes to his shop by bicycle.
leave : (রওনা দেওয়ার জন্য) বাড়ি বা কোনো জায়গা ত্যাগ করা

Read these sentences carefully.

Hasan gets up at 6.
Hasan and Rafiq eat breakfast together.
Thus we say

Hasan          | eats breakfast at 6.
He             |
Salma          |         
She            |
and
Hasan and Rafiq |
They           |         
We             | eat breakfast at 6.
You            |
I              |
Now fill in the blank in each sentence with the right verb form given in brackets. No. 1 is done for you.

1. Salma goes to school everyday. (go/goes)
2. Salma and her friend Nazma usually _______ to school together. (go/goes)
3. They always _______ back together. (come/comes)
4. Salma _______ with her father and mother. (live/lives)
5. Nazma and her little brother Reza _______ with their aunt and uncle. (live/lives)
6. Nazma's aunt _____ in a primary school. (teach/teaches)
7. Her uncle ________ a bus. (drive/drives)
8. Salma, Nazma and Reza _____ together in the afternoon. (play/plays)

Read these statements, questions and answers carefully.

Statement : Rafiq is always late for breakfast.
Question : Is Rafiq always late for breakfast ?
Answer : Yes, he is.

Statement : He is never late for school.
Question : Is he (ever) late for school ?
Answer : No, he isn't.

Statement : Hasan and Rafiq are brothers.
Question : Are Hasan and Rafiq brothers ?
Answer : Yes, they are.

Statement : Hasan gets up at 6.
Question : Does Hasan get up at 6 ?
Answer : Yes, they do.

Now make these statements into questions and then answer them. No. 1 is done for you. Use contracted (short) forms where possible.

1. Hasan is a shopkeeper.
   Q : Is Hasan a shopkeeper ?
   A : Yes, he is.

2. Hasan takes his cows into the field.
   Q : Does Hasan take ......................................................... ?
   A : .................................................................
3  Rafiq gets up at 7.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ............................................................... .

4  Hasan and his parents eat breakfast together.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ............................................................... .

5  Hasan goes to his shop by bicycle.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ............................................................... .

6  Rafiq goes to school at 7.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ............................................................... .

7  Hasan and Rafiq leave home together.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ............................................................... .

8  Rafiq is always late for breakfast.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ............................................................... .

9  Rafiq eats breakfast with his father.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ............................................................... .
A

Look at the picture and read the passage silently.

Hasan leaves home at about 7.30 am. He reaches his shop at about 8. Then he opens his shop. Other shopkeepers open their shops at 8.30 or 9. Hasan is a simple young man. He is not greedy. He sells rice, dal, cooking oil and so on. Hasan does not sell tobacco and cigarettes. Everyday many villagers come to his grocery. They are not rich people. They do not buy many things, but they buy rice and dal everyday.

He never cheats them. So they like him. Hasan eats chapati, an egg and a banana for lunch at 1 pm. Everyday he brings his lunch from home. He does not eat out. Hasan shuts his shop at 7 pm.

B

Read and note.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Bengali</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>reach</td>
<td>পৌঁছা</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>greedy</td>
<td>লোভী</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and so on</td>
<td>et cetera (এট সেটরা) ইত্যাদি</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>grocery</td>
<td>মুদির দোকান (grocer- মুদি)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tobacco</td>
<td>তামাক</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cheat</td>
<td>ঠকান, প্রতারণা করা</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Read these questions and answers carefully.

1a Question: When does Hasan leave home?
   or What time does Hasan leave home?
1b Answer: At 7.30.
   or Hasan leaves home at 7.30.

2a Question: When/What time do the other shopkeepers open their shops?
2b Answer: At 8.30 or 9.
   or The other shopkeepers open their shops at 8.30 or 9.

Now make questions for the answers given below. (নিচের উত্তরগুলোর এপ্রশ তৈরি করি।) No. 3 is done for you.

3 Hasan eats lunch at 1 pm.
   Q: What time/When does Hasan eat lunch?

4 Hasan shuts his shops at 7 pm.
   Q: ............................................................... ?

5 The other shopkeepers shut their shops at 8 pm.
   Q: ............................................................... ?

6 Hasan comes home at 7.30 pm.
   Q: ............................................................... ?

7 Hasan, Rafiq and their parents eat dinner at 8.30 pm.
   Q: ............................................................... ?

8 Rafiq goes to bed at 10 pm.
   Q: ............................................................... ?

Read these sentences carefully.

1a Hasan is happy.
1b He is not greedy.
2a Hasan sells rice, dal, cooking oil and so on.
2b He does not sell tobacco and cigarettes.
3a Hasan's parents like chapati.
3b They do not like bread. (ইটি)

1a, 2a and 3a are affirmative (হায়-বোধক) and 1b, 2b and 3b are negative (না-বোধক) sentences. So we make negative sentences in this way:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hasan/Salma</th>
<th>is not/isn't fat (মোটা)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>He/She</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hasan and Salma</th>
<th>are not / aren't greedy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>They/We/You</td>
<td>am not/I'm not greedy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hasan</th>
<th>Does not /doesn't drink coffee.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>He</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salma</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>She</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hasan and Rafiq</th>
<th>do not/don't drink coffee.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>They</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>We</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>You</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Now make these sentences negative.**

4 Kamal has a lot of money.
   Neg. Kamal doesn't have a lot of money.
5 Hasan likes rainy days.
   Neg. Hasan doesn't like rainy days.
6 Fatema goes to school by bus.
   Neg. .............................................................. .
7 Nazma and Reza eat breakfast together.
   Neg. .............................................................. .
8 Some shopkeepers shut their shops at 7.
   Neg. .............................................................. .
9 The villagers go to work early.
   Neg. .............................................................. .
10 Some people are tired (কুঁটা).
   Neg. .............................................................. .
11 Salma gets up at 7.
   Neg. .............................................................. .
12 Hasan's parents eat breakfast together.
You can also use never and make negative sentences.

Examples:
Kamal has a lot of money.
Neg. He doesn't have a lot of money.
or He never has a lot of money.

Hasan likes rainy days.
Neg. Hasan does not like rainy days.
or Hasan never likes rainy days.

Now use never and make sentences 5-13 negative.

Answer these questions about yourself and your family.

1 When do you get up?
   I get up ........................................................ .

2 What time does your brother/sister/mother get up?
   .................................................................................... .

3 What time do you eat breakfast?
   .................................................................................... .

4 When do the other members of your family eat breakfast?
   .................................................................................... .

5 When do you start work?
   .................................................................................... .

6 What time do you stop work?
   .................................................................................... .

7 Do you like your work?
   .................................................................................... .

8 Does your mother/sister/aunt like big dogs? Why?
   .................................................................................... .

9 Do you live in a big city?
   .................................................................................... .

10 When do you visit your friend/uncle?
Friday is holiday. Hasan does not go to work on Fridays. He gets up late. Then he runs in the open air for about an hour.

All the family members eat breakfast together on Fridays. They eat 'Khichuri' or 'Parata' with chicken curry or eggs. After breakfast they often sit together and discuss family problems for sometime. On Fridays Hasan often goes to the river with his fishing-rod. He likes fishing very much. Often he catches a big 'showl' or 'gozar'. He fishes for about three hours.

Hasan often goes to town on Fridays to buy clothes for himself and his family. Usually he goes by bus. In the evening Hasan and Rafiq often go to the Thana Community Centre (TCC) to watch TV. They walk to the Centre and stay there for about two hours.
### Read and note.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Bengali</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>holiday</td>
<td>ছুটির দিন</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>family</td>
<td>পরিবার</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chicken curry</td>
<td>মুরগির তরকারি</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>often</td>
<td>প্রায়ই He often goes to town.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>discuss</td>
<td>আলোচনা করা</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>problem</td>
<td>সমস্যা</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fishing-rod</td>
<td>ছিপ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>catch</td>
<td>ধরা</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thana Community</td>
<td>এখানে সভা সমিতি হয় এবং প্রায় কেউই</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Centre</td>
<td>TV দেখার সুযোগ থাকে</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spend</td>
<td>(সময়) কাটায়</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Read these statements and questions carefully.

1a Statement : Hasan runs in the open air.
1b Question : What does Hasan do in the open air?
2a Statement : They eat 'khichuri' for breakfast on Fridays.
2b Question : What do they eat for breakfast on Fridays?
3a Statement : Hasan often goes to the river-bank with his fishing-rod.
3b Question : Where does Hasan often go with his fishing-rod?
4a Statement : They often go to the Bazar.
4b Question : Where do they often go?
5a Statement : He runs in the open air for about an hour.
5b Question : How long does he run in the open air?
6a Statement : They discuss family problems for some time.
6b Question : How long do they discuss family problems?

**এভাবে What does/What do, Where does/Where do এবং How long does/How long do ব্যবহার করে প্রশ্ন তৈরি করা হয়।**

### Now make these statements into questions.

7 Hasan likes fishing very much.
   Q : What does Hasan like very much?
8 He catches fish.
   Q : .................................................................?
9 Hasan often goes to town.
   Q : .................................................................?
10 They eat breakfast together on Fridays.
    Q : .................................................................?
11 Hasan sleeps for about six hours.
    Q : .................................................................?
12 Hasan often goes to town on Fridays.
Q: .................................................................?

13 Everyday Hasan and Rafiq stay with their father for sometime.
Q: How long ...................................................

14 Hasan and Rafiq watch TV on Friday night.
Q: .................................................................?

15 They live in a village.
Q: .................................................................?

16 Hasan catches fish for about three hours.
Q: .................................................................?

17 Hasan sells good things.
Q: .................................................................?

18 Hasan's mother often cooks chicken curry, vegetables and dal for lunch on Fridays.
Q: .................................................................?

Read these sentences carefully.

1 Hasan always gets up at 6. (Lesson 1)
2 Hasan usually goes to his shop by bicycle. (Lesson 1)
3 Everyday Hasan brings his lunch from home. (Lesson 2)
4 Hasan does not go to work on Fridays. (Lesson 3)

Now use always, usually, everyday, on Fridays, often in the following gaps. (একই word বা phrase একাধিক শব্দ্যাণে বসতে পারে)

5 Kamal is a good student. He ______ learns his lessons well.
6 He does not go to school ________.
7 He eats his breakfast at 6.30 ________.
8 He – learns his lessons in his room, but he _______ does his homework on the verandah (বারাণ্ডা).
9 _______ he studies (পড়ালেখা করে) English ________.
10 Hasan and his friends catch fish ____________.

Answer these questions about yourself.

1 What do you do in the morning ?
2 When do you eat your lunch ?
3 What do you eat for lunch ?
4 What do you do after lunch ?
5 How long do you work everyday ?
6 How long does your father/mother work everyday ?
Revision and Test

A

Make 8 sentences from the table. No. 1 is done for you.

|      | buy their clothes from Mr Rashid's shop.  
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>He</td>
<td>eats breakfast at 7.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>goes to a school in Station Road.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>They</td>
<td>play football on Fridays.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>lives in Jamalpur.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>work in an office.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>likes mangoes.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>often run in the morning.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1. They buy their clothes from Mr Rashid's shop.

2. ..................................................................

3. ..................................................................

4. ..................................................................

5. ..................................................................

6. ..................................................................

7. ..................................................................

8. ..................................................................

B

Read the passage silently for comprehension (বোঝার জন্য).

Mr Abdur Rashid is a farmer. Mrs Rashid is a housewife. They are rich. They have a lot of land. Everyday Mr Rashid hires 2 or 3 workers. They work in his fields. They start work in the morning and finish in the afternoon. He has a servant and a cook. The servant does all the household work and the cook usually cooks chicken or fish curry, dal and vegetables for Mr and Mrs Rashid.
Mrs Amina Rashid is a kind of woman. She always gives the workers a good lunch. Mr Rashid pays them well at the end of the day. The workers like Mr and Mrs Rashid very much. Often the evening Mr and Mrs Rashid go round the village. On Fridays they give alms (ডিক্কা) and food to the beggars. They are happy.

C

Using Do or Does, make the following sentences questions. Then answer them. Use information from B.

1. Mr Rashid works in the fields.
   Q : Does Mr Rashid work in the fields ?
   A : No, he doesn't/does not.

2. Mrs Rashid always gives a good lunch to the workers.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ................................................................. .

3. Mr and Mrs Rashid have a lot of land.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ................................................................. .

4. The workers like Mr and Mrs Rashid.
   Q : ................................................................. ?
   A : ................................................................. .

5. The cook cooks for the workers.
   Q : ................................................................. .
   A : ................................................................. .

6. Mr Rashid hires 2 or 3 workers everyday.
   Q : ................................................................. .
   A : ................................................................. .
Make eight questions from the table and answer them. Use information from B.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>When</th>
<th>What does do</th>
<th>Mr Rashid hire 2 or 3 workers?</th>
<th>they give to the beggars?</th>
<th>Mrs Rashid give to the workers?</th>
<th>the workers finish work?</th>
<th>Mr and Mrs Rashid go round the village?</th>
<th>the servant do?</th>
<th>the cook usually cook?</th>
<th>the workers start work?</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Q:</td>
<td>A:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Q:</td>
<td>A:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Q:</td>
<td>A:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Q:</td>
<td>A:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Q:</td>
<td>A:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Q:</td>
<td>A:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Q:</td>
<td>A:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Q:</td>
<td>A:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Fill in the gaps with Where or How long.

Kamal:  (1) Where do you work, Salam?
Salam:  In a hotel in Dhaka.
Kamal:  (2) ________ do you work?
Salam:  From 5 pm. to 11 pm.
Kamal:  (3) ________ do you go after 11 pm?
Salam:  I go to a place called Sutrapur.
Kamal:  (4) ________ is it?
Salam:  It is in the old part of Dhaka. I live there with a friend.
Kamal:  Good. Does he work too?
Salam:  Yes, he does.
Kamal:  (5) ________ does he work? In the same hotel?
Salam:  No. He works in a shop.
Kamal:  (6) ________ does he work?
Salam:  He works about 14 hours a day.
Kamal:  Oh!
Salam:  (7) ________ do you work, Kamal?
Kamal:  I work at the post office. I am a postman.
Salam:  (8) ________ do you work?
Kamal:  Well, I start at 9 am and usually finish at 3 pm.

Answer these questions about yourself.

1. What time do you get up?
2. What time do you eat breakfast?
3. What time do you start work?
4. What time do you finish work?
5. What do you do in the evening?
6. Do you play football?
7. Do you watch TV?
8. Where do you go on Fridays?
9. Do you like fish?
10. Do you like music?
11. What language (ভাষা) do you speak?
12. How often do you wash your clothes?
13. How often do you visit your relatives?
**LESSON : 1**

**B**

2 (5) 3 (4) 4(2)  5 (6) 6 (7) 7 (3)

**D**

2  go  3 come  4 lives  5 live  6 teaches  7 drives  8 play

**E**

2 Does Hasan take his cows into the field?  Yes, he does.
3 Does Rafiq get up at 7?  Yes he does.
4 Do Hasan and his parents eat breakfast together?  No, they don't.
5 Does Hasan go to his shop by bicycle?  No, he doesn't.
6 Does Rafiq go to school at 7?  he does.
7 Do Hasan and Rafiq leave home together?  Yes, they do.
8 Is Rafiq always late for breakfast?  Yes, he is.
9 Does Rafiq eat his breakfast with his father?  No, he doesn't.

**LESSON : 2**

**B**

4  What time/When does Hasan shut his shop?
5  When do the other shopkeepers shut their shops?
6  When does Hasan come home?
7  What time do Hasan, Rafiq and their parents eat dinner?
8  What time does Rafiq go to bed?

**C**

6  Fatema doesn't (does not) go to school by bus.
7  Nazma and Reza don't (do not) eat breakfast together.
8  Some shopkeepers don't (do not) shut their shops at 7.
9  The villagers don't (do not) go to work early.
10  Some people aren't (are not) tired.
11  Salma doesn't get up at 7.
12  Hasan's parents don't (do not) eat breakfast together.
13  Many people don't (do not) eat out.
Using 'never'

5 Hasan never likes rainy days.
6 Fatema never goes to school by bus.
7 Nazma and Reza never eat breakfast together.
8 Some shopkeepers never shut their shops at 7.
9 The villagers never go to work early.
10 Some people are never tired.
11 Salma never gets up at 7.
12 Hasan's parents never eat breakfast together.
13 Many people never eat out.

Write the answers and show them to your tutor.

LESSON : 3

8 What does he catch ?
9 Where does Hasan often go ?
10 What do they eat together on Fridays ?
11 How long does Hasan sleep ?
12 What does Hasan often do on Fridays ?
13 How long do Hasan and Rafiq stay with their father everyday ?
14 What do Hasan and Rafiq do on Friday night ?
15 Where do they live ?
16 How long does Hasan catch fish ?
17 What does Hasan sell ?
18 What does Hasan's mother often cook for lunch on Fridays ?

5 always 6 on Fridays
7 everyday 8 usually, often
9 usually, everyday 10 on Fridays

Write your answers and show them to your tutor.

LESSON : 4

2 He eats .................................  .
3 He .................................  .
4 They play .................................  .
5 He .................................  .
6 They .................................  .
7 He .................................  .
Q: Does Mrs Rashid always give .................. ?
A: Yes, she does.

Q: Do Mr and Mrs Rashid have a ................... ?
A: Yes, they do.

Q: Do the workers like Mr and Mrs Rashid ?
A: Yes, they do.

Q: Does the cooker cook for the workers ?
A: No, he doesn't.

Q: Does Mr Rashid hire 2/3 workers ................ ?
A: Yes, he does.

Q: Do the workers work in Mr ....................... ?
A: Yes, they do.

Q: Do Mr and Mrs Rashid often go .................... ?
A: Yes, they do.

Q: Do Mr and Mrs Rashid help ....................... ?
A: Yes, they do.

Q: What do they give to the beggars ?
A: Alms and food.

Q: What does Mrs Rashid give to the workers ?
A: A good lunch.

Q: When do the workers finish work ?
A: In the afternoon.

Q: When do Mr and Mrs Rashid go .................... ?
A: In the evening.

Q: What does the servant do ?
A: He does all the household work.

Q: What does the cook usually cook ?
A: Chicken or fish curry, dal and vegetables.

Q: When do the workers start work ?
A: In the morning.

Write your answers and show them to your tutor.
Past Actions

Objectives

On Completion of this unit you will be able to –

• talk about past events
• use sometime adverbs such as 'yesterday', last years, etc.
• make statements, questions and answers with past actions
• recognise and use past simple and progressive tenses in reading and writing
• answer some questions about yourself using past tenses
• answer some question about yourself using past tenses

Overview

Lesson 1:  Yesterday
Lesson 2:  A Writer
Lesson 3:  A Story
Lesson 4:  Revision and Test

Answer Key
Today is Saturday. Hasan is getting ready for work early today. Yesterday was Friday. Hasan got up late. He ate rice and fish curry for breakfast and put on his best clothes – a blue shirt and brown trousers.

Hasan never goes to his shop on Fridays. So he went to the bus stop and took a bus to Dhaka. Hasan reached Dhaka at 10 am. At first he went to his friend Jahid at Azimpur. Jahid was not at home at that time. However, he soon came back with a lot of shopping.

Hasan and Jahid drank some tea and went to New Market. There Hasan bought a sari for his mother and a punjabi for his father. He chose a yellow T-shirt for Rafiq. But Jahid did not like the colour. So they finally bought a red T-shirt for Rafiq.
Read and note.

1. Verb forms

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present form (always, now, etc.)</th>
<th>Past form (yesterday, last week, etc.)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>He/She</td>
<td>He/She/I/We/You/They</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gets</td>
<td>get</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eats</td>
<td>eat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wears</td>
<td>wear</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>goes</td>
<td>go</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>takes</td>
<td>take</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reaches</td>
<td>reach</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>comes</td>
<td>come</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>drinks</td>
<td>drink</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buys</td>
<td>buy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chooses</td>
<td>choose</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2. Making Questions

Look at these statements, questions and answers.

Statement : Hasan got up late.
Question : Did Hasan get up late ?
Answer : Yes, he did.

Statement : Jahid was not at home.
Question : Was Jahid at home ?
Answer : No, he wasn't.

We begin this type of questions (এ তিন ধরণের প্রশ্ন) with Did, Was, Were, Had etc. and we answer them with Yes or No. They are Yes / No questions.

Look at these statements and questions again.

Statement : Hasan wore his best clothes.
Question : What did Hasan wear ?

Statement : Hasan went to Dhaka.
Question : Where did Hasan go ?
We begin this type of questions with **What, Where, When, How, Why** etc. They are **Wh-questions**.
Make both Yes / No and Wh-questions from these statements and then answer them. Use information from the passage in A.

1. Statement: Yesterday was Friday.
   Question: Was yesterday Friday? (Yes / No)
   Answer: Yes, it was.
   Question: What was yesterday? (Wh-)
   Answer: It was Friday.

2. Statement: Hasan ate rice and fish curry.
   Question: Did Hasan eat ....................... ?
   Answer: Yes, he did.
   or
   Question: What did Hasan eat?
   Answer: Hasan ate rice and fish curry.

   Question: ......................................................... ?
   Answer: ......................................................... .

   Question: ......................................................... ?
   Answer: ......................................................... .

5. Statement: Jahid did a lot of shopping.
   Question: ......................................................... ?
   Answer: ......................................................... .

   Question: ......................................................... ?
   Answer: ......................................................... .

7. Statement: They went to New Market.
   Question: ......................................................... ?
   Answer: ......................................................... .

8. Statement: Hasan bought a sari for his aunt.
   Question: ......................................................... ?
   Answer: ......................................................... .

   Question: ......................................................... ?
   Answer: ......................................................... .

    Question: ......................................................... ?
    Answer: ......................................................... .

11. Statement: Jahid did not like the colour.
    Question: ......................................................... ?
    Answer: ......................................................... .
Yesterday Salma did the things in Box A and did not do the things in Box B. Make sentences like the example. Use but of and to join the two sentences.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A</th>
<th>B</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 eat a banana</td>
<td>drink coffee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 watch TV</td>
<td>listen to the radio</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 write a letter to a friend</td>
<td>visit her other friend</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 stay at home</td>
<td>do her home work</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 do her homework</td>
<td>work in the garden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 read a story</td>
<td>read her textbooks</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 help her mother with the cooking</td>
<td>go to the cinema</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 play badminton in the afternoon</td>
<td>play with her friend</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Example:
1 Yesterday Salma ate a banana but she did not drink coffee.
2 ..................................................................
3 ..................................................................
4 ..................................................................
5 ..................................................................
6 ..................................................................
7 ..................................................................
8 ..................................................................

Write about five things you did and five things you did not do yesterday.
A Writer

Read this passage about Nousher Ali.

Mr Nousher Ali was born in 1938 in a village in Mymensingh. As a child he was healthy and happy. He went to school at the age of 7. He passed the Matriculation Examination when he was 17. Then he joined a college in town. He did his BA degree at 21 and in the same year he got a job in a bank. Mr Ali married two years later. Within five or six years he became a very successful clerk at the bank. However, he did not like the job. In 1971 he left the bank and took a teaching job. Soon he became a good teacher. He taught for 15 years at the same school. Then he left teaching and became a writer. He writes novels and short stories. Now he is a famous writer.

Read and Note.
We can express past actions with the following phrases:

in 1938 / in 19___ at the age of 7 / at 7 / when he / she was 17
in the same year : একই বছরে
two years later : দুই বছর পরে
for 15 years : ১৫ বছর ধরে
was born : জন্মগ্রহণ করেছিলেন
There are four answers to each question / statement. Out of these four, only one answer is right / correct. Select the right answer and put a tick mark (✓) against it. No. 1 is done for you.

1. When did Nousher Ali go to school?
   a. In 1938.
   ✓ b. When he was 7.
   c. At the age of 17.
   d. When he was a child.

2. Nousher Ali got a job in a bank
   a. after he passed the Matriculation Examination.
   b. when he was 17.
   c. at the age of 21.
   d. before he did his BA.

3. When did Nousher Ali marry?
   a. When he was 23.
   b. At the age of 21.
   c. While he was a successful clerk at a bank.
   d. Before he got a job at a bank.

4. Nousher Ali left teaching
   a. in 1971.
   b. before he became a bank clerk.
   c. in 1986.
   d. when he did not like the job.

5. Why did he leave teaching?
   a. To become a writer.
   b. To become a bank clerk.
   c. He did not like teaching.
d  He retired from teaching.
Here are some events (ঘটনা) in the life of Mr Nesar Ahmed. Using these events (এই ঘটনাগুলো ব্যবহার করে) describe Mr Nesar Ahmed as shown in the example.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Event</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>born in a small town</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Example: Mr Nesar Ahmed was born in a small town in 1948.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>started school</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>He started school when he was 6.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>left school</td>
<td>16</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>3 years later</td>
<td></td>
<td>shop assistant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.</td>
<td>married</td>
<td>25</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.</td>
<td>1975</td>
<td></td>
<td>had a daughter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.</td>
<td>1 year later</td>
<td></td>
<td>a job in a departmental store in Dhaka</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.</td>
<td>the same year</td>
<td></td>
<td>took his family to Dhaka</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.</td>
<td>1985</td>
<td></td>
<td>opened a book store</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Try to remember (স্মরণ করা) some important events that happened in your life from age 9. Then describe what happened and when.
Read the questions and then read the passage and answer the questions.

1. Who was Hazrat Omar (R)?
2. Where did he usually go at night and why?
3. What did he see in the hut one night?
4. How did he help the woman?

One evening Hasan told a story to his cousins – Runa and Rashed. Here is the story:

Hazrat Omar (R) was a great Caliph of the Muslim world. He was a kind-hearted and just ruler.

Usually he went round different places at night to see for himself the conditions of his people. He did it in disguise.

One night the Caliph was walking along as usual. Suddenly he heard some noise while he was passing by a hut. He went near the hut and found that some children were sitting around a big pot. Their mother was cooking something in the pot. The children were hungry and they were crying for food. "What are you cooking?" the Caliph asked. The woman looked at his face helplessly and did not say anything. Then the Caliph found out that there was no food inside the pot. She was just boiling water. He was very sorry. He quickly came back to the 'National Store', took a bag of flour and carried it himself to the woman.

"Thank you, stranger", said the woman. "Thank you for your help. The Caliph should be as kind as you." In fact, the woman did not know that the stranger was the Caliph himself.

Read and note.

| Caliph: খলিফা |
| just: ন্যায়পরায়ণ |
| ruler: শাসনকর্তা |
to see for himself : নিজেই দেখার জন্য
condition : অবস্থা
in disguise : হৃদয়বেশ
as usual : মাঝারি
hut : কুঠোঁড়া
helplessly : অসহায়ভাবে
boil : জল দেয়া, সেদ্ধ করা
National Store : জাতীয় ভাড়া
flour : আটা, ময়দা
stranger : আগন্নুক

Read these sentences carefully.

1. The Caliph was walking alone.
2. The children were sitting around a big pot.

The verbs in bold express (প্রকাশ করে) that some action in the past (অতীত) was continuing (চলছিল) for sometime. This is the past continuous tense.

Notice the verb form:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>verb form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I / He / She / Kamal</td>
<td>was walking.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>We / You / They / the children</td>
<td>were walking.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Now make a sentence from each group of words. Put the verb in the past continuous form. No. 3 is done for you.

3. My parents / watch / TV / 10 pm.
   My parents were watching TV at 10 pm.
4. Kamal / write / a letter / to his friend
   ..................................................................... .
5. Shahana / cook / breakfast / 6.30 am
   ..................................................................... .
6. Mr Ali and his son / work / in the garden / 9 am
   ..................................................................... .
7. The child / sleep / in the cot
   ..................................................................... .
8. The boys / play football / afternoon
   ..................................................................... .
9. Mr Rahman / read / a newspaper / on the verandah
   ..................................................................... .
10. Salma and Nazma / listen to / a song / on the radio
    ..................................................................... .
11. Some people / wait / on the platform / for the 10.30 train
    ..................................................................... .
Read the sentence carefully.

1. He heard some noise when he was passing by a hut.
   লক্ষ কা ণ্ড এই বাঁকে দুটো কাজ অতিতে ঘটেছে। একটি কাজ (he heard) শেষ হয়ে গেছে, আরেকটি কাজ (he was passing) অতিতে কিছুক্ষণ ধরে চলছিল। প্রথমটিতে past simple আর দ্বিতীয়টিতে past continuous ব্যবহৃত হয়েছে।

Now put the right form of the verbs in brackets (past simple or past continuous). No 2 is done for you.

2. I ______ (have) tea when my friend _____ (come)
   I was having tea when my friend came.

3. The Caliph ______ (find) that the children ______ (sit) around a pot.

4. I ______ (take) a photograph of her while she ____ (dance).

5. The Caliph ______ (see) the children in the hut. They _____ (cry).

6. He ______ (ride) a bicycle when the accident ____ (happen).

7. The phone _____ (ring) when I ___ (eat) breakfast.

8. She ______ (fall) asleep last night when she ______ (watch) TV.

9. He ______ (break) the spade when he _____ (work) in the garden.

10. The plate _____ (slip) out of her hand and _____ (break) while she ____________ (do) the washing up. (বাসনকোন থেয়া)

11. Last night I ______ (write) a letter to my friend Kamal when I ______ (hear) a knock on the door. I _____ (open) the door and saw it ______ (be) Kamal.

Look at each picture and answer the question: "What did Kamal do yesterday?" No. 1 is done for you.

1. Kamal cleaned the car.

2. He ................................

3. .....................................

4. .....................................

5. .....................................

6. .....................................
The following table shows some events in the life of Sher-e-Bangla A. K. Fazlul Huq with the years they took place. Make a sentence for each event. No. 1 is done for you.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Event</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Sentence</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 birth at Chakhar</td>
<td>1873</td>
<td>He was born in 1873 at Chakhar.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Entrance Examination from Barisal Zilla School</td>
<td>1889</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 F. A. Examination from Presidency College, Calcutta</td>
<td>1891</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 M.A in mathematics</td>
<td>1895</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 first Muslim Mayor of the Calcutta Corporation</td>
<td>1934</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 Chief Minister of undivided Bengal</td>
<td>1937</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 Governor of former East Pakistan</td>
<td>from 1956 to 1958</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 founder of many educational institutions</td>
<td>during his life-time</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 death at Dhaka Medical College Hospital</td>
<td>1962</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Fill in the gaps with the right form of the verbs in brackets.

Some years ago my friend Majed and I (go) ....1. to see a film at the Modhumita Cinema Hall. When we (reach) ....2. the Hall we find ....3. that many people (stand) ....4. in the queue (লাইন) for tickets. However, we (get) ....5. two more expensive tickets from a different counter. It (be) ....6. an old film called "Gone with the Wind". I (enjoy) ....7. the film very much. But Majed (not/like) ....8. it so much. He always (like) ....9. comic films. Anyway, when the show (be) ....10. over it (rain) ....11. . So we (not/go) ....12. out, because there (be) ....13. no rickshaws on the road. Some people (go) ....14. to the restaurant there for tea. We (decide) ....15. to have some tea too.

Answer these questions about yourself, first orally then in writing.

1. What did you do yesterday evening?
2. Where did you go?
3. Why did you go there?
4. What time did you start?
5. What time did you finish?
LESSON : 1

C

2  Q  Did Hasan eat rice and fish curry?
   A  Yes, he did.

3  Q  Did Hasan go to the bus stop?
   A  Yes, he did.
   or
   Q  Where did Hasan go?
   A  To the bus stop.

4  Q  Did Hasan reach Dhaka at 9 am?
   A  No, he didn't. (He reached Dhaka at 10 am)
   or
   Q  When did Hasan reach Dhaka?
   A  At 10 am.

5  Q  Did Jahid do a lot of shopping?
   A  Yes, he did.
   or
   Q  What did Jahid do?
   A  He did a lot of shopping.

6  Q  Did Hasan and Jahid drink some milk?
   A  No, they didn't.
   or
   Q  What did Hasan and Jahid drink?
   A  Some tea.

7  Q  Did they go to New Market?
   A  Yes, they did.
   or
   Q  Where did they go?
   A  To New Market.

8  Q  Did Hasan buy a sari for his aunt?
   A  No, he didn't.
   or
   Q  What did Hasan buy for his aunt?
A Nothing. (He bought a sari for his mother.)

9 Q Did he buy a punjabi for his father?
   A Yes, he did.
   or
   Q What did he buy for his father?
   A A pubjabi.

10 Q Did Hasan choose a yellow T-shirt for Rafiq?
    A Yes, he did.
    or
    Q What did Hasan choose for Rafiq?
    A A yellow T-shirt. (He chose a yellow T-shirt for Rafiq.)

D

2 Yesterday Salma watched TV but she didn't listen to the radio.
3 Yesterday she wrote a letter to a friend but she did not visit her other friend.
4 Yesterday she stayed at home but she didn't do her homework.
5 Yesterday she did her homework but she did not work in the garden.
6 Yesterday she read a story book but she did not read her textbooks.
7 Yesterday she helped her mother with the cooking but she didn't go to the cinema.
8 Yesterday she played badminton in the afternoon but she didn't play with her friend.

E

Write the answers and show them to your tutor.

LESSON : 2

C

2 c  3 a  4c  5 a

D

2 He started school at the age of 6. (or He started school when he was 6.)
3 He left school when he was 16.
4 He became a shop assistant 3 years later.
5 He married at 25.
6 He had a daughter in 1975.
7 One year later he got a job in a departmental store in Dhaka.
8 In the same year he took his family to Dhaka.

\[\text{\textit{Describe the events that happened in your life and show it to your tutor.}}\]

\[\text{LESSON : 3}\]

A
1 Hazrat Omar (R) was a great Caliph.
2 He usually went round the houses of his people at night to see their conditions for himself.
3 One night he saw some children in a hut with their mother.
4 He gave her a bag of flour.

C
4 Kamal was writing a letter to his friend.
5 Sahana was cooking breakfast at 6.30 am.
6 Mr Ali and his son were working in the garden at 9 am.
7 The child was sleeping in the cot.
8 The boys were playing football in the afternoon.
9 Mr Rahman was reading a newspaper on the verandah.
10 Salma and Nazma were listening to a song on the radio.
11 Some people were waiting on the platform for the 10.30 train.

D
3 found, were sitting
4 took, was dancing
5 saw, were crying
6 was riding, happened
7 rang, was eating
8 fell, was watching
9 broke, was working
10 slipped, broke, was doing
11 was writing, heard, opened, was
LESSON : 4

A
2 He wrote a letter.
3 He watched TV.
4 he talked on the phone.
5 he read a magazine.
6 he listened to the radio.
7 He played football.
8 He drew a picture.
9 He rode his bicycle.
10 He typed a letter.

B
2 Sher-e-Bangla A. K. Fazlul Huq passed the Entrance Examination from Barisal Zilla School in 1889.
3 He passed the F. A. Examination from Presidency College, Calcutta in 1891.
4 He did his M A in mathematics in 1895.
5 He became the first Muslim Mayor of the Calcutta Corporation in 1934.
6 He became the Chief Minister of undivided Bengal in 1937.
7 He was Governor of former East Pakistan from 1956 to 1958.
8 He was founder of many educational institutions during his life-time.
9 He died at Dhaka Medical College Hospital in 1962.

C
1 went 2 reached
3 found 4 were standing
5 got 6 was
7 enjoyed 8 did not like
9 likes 10 was
11 was raining 12 did not go (didn't go)
13 were 14 were going
15 decided

D
Write the answers and show them to your tutor.
Future Actions

Objectives

On Completion of this unit you will be able to –

• talk about future events
• use 'will/shall' and 'am/is/are+going to' to express future intentions
• use present continuous tenses to express future plans

Overview

LESSON 1 : Hasan's Bike Breaks

LESSON 2 : Jamil's Big Brother is Getting Married

LESSON 3 : A Busy Day

LESSON 4 : Revision and Test

ANSWER KEY
Hasan’s Bike Breaks

A

Look at the picture, read the following questions and try to answer them. Then read the passage.

1. What is the young man doing?
2. Where is he going?
3. What is the old man?

One Friday Hasan wanted to go to a village about 7 kilometres from Malamari. He wanted to visit a friend.

Father : How will you go, Hasan?
Hasan : By bicycle.
Father : When will you start?
Hasan : I think I'll start now.
So he took his bicycle and set off. But while he was riding it fast, it slipped on the muddy road and fell apart. It was only about a kilometre from his house. So he took his bicycle to a nearby repairer.

Hasan : Can you repair my bike, please?
Man : I'm afraid I can't do it now. You see, I'm busy. Leave it, I'll do it tomorrow. Will that do?
Hasan : But I need the bike now. Will you give me yours? I'll return it tomorrow.
Man : OK. But you'll have to pay. It's only 5 taka an hour.
Hasan : All right. I'll pay you when I return. I'll probably return in the evening.
Man : Many people say that, but they don't pay when they return the bike. How can I trust you?
Hasan : Then I think I'll go back home and bring the money. Here's my bike.
Man : OK. I trust you. Take the bike, but don't tell anybody that I gave you my bike without payment.
Hasan : I promise I won't tell anybody about it and I'll pay you as soon as I come back.

Read and note.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Bangla</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>want</td>
<td>চাওয়া</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>set off</td>
<td>যাত্রা দিয়ে করা</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ride</td>
<td>চলানো</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| fast           | `ঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুऩুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘুঘু

Future Actions

Page- 41
Read the passage again and put a tick mark (✓) against the best answer.

1. Hasan's bicycle fell to pieces
   a. at a place about 7 kilometres from his village.
   b. when he was near a repairer.
   c. at a place about 1 kilometre from his house.
   d. when he took his bike and set off.

2. The repairer did not repair Hasan's bicycle then, because
   a. he was doing some other things.
   b. he wanted to repair it the following day.
   c. Hasan did not have enough money with him.
   d. he wanted to give his own bicycle to Hasan.

3. When will Hasan return the repairer's bicycle?
   a. In the evening.
   b. Tomorrow.
   c. When he goes back home and brings the money.
   d. As soon as he comes back.

Read these sentences carefully.

1. I'll repair it tomorrow.
2. I promise I'll pay you as soon as I come back.
3. Probably I'll come back in the evening.

Notice:  
I/We/You/He/She/It/They/ will/'ll help the man.

Again, read these sentences carefully.

4. Will you give me your bike?
5. Will that do?

Will ব্যবহার করে এভাবে প্রশ্ন করা হয়।

Notice:  
Will you / he / she / it / they help me?

Now complete these sentences with will/'ll + suitable verbs from the list: shut, bring, do, pass, visit, help, go, come, phone
No. 6 is done for you.

6. A: I'm busy, I can't go shopping.
   B: Don't worry I will go. (I'll go.)

7. I must clean the pot. ............... you .......... some soap and water, please?
8 It's so cold. ............ you ...........the door, please?
9 It's 11 o'clock now. Shafiq goes to bed at 10. So I .......... him in the morning.
10 I'm sorry I forgot to bring your book. I promise I ............... it back tomorrow.
11 A : Can you buy some paper for me, please?
    B : I'm sorry I .......... (not) out now.
12 A : Is she here?
    B : No, she ................ probably ............ at 5.
13 A : This is very important. You mustn't tell anybody.
    B : I promise I ...................... .
14 I'm doing my homework. ............ you ............ quiet, please?
15 A : This bag is very heavy. I can't lift it.
    B : OK. I ............... you with it.
16 A : I'm worried I won't do well in my examination.
    B : Don't worry, you ...................... .
17 A : When is Mr Rahman coming?
    B : I think he ................. tonight.
18 A : What are you plans for your first day in Dhaka?
    B : Well, I've no plans. But I probably ........... some historical places in the old part of the city.

Suppose (a) you are going to your village/home town for the Eid holiday. Now answer these questions.

1 Where will you go?
2 How will you go?
3 How long will you stay in the village/town?
4 What will you do on the first day?
5 What will you do on the last day?
6 Will you do anything for the poor people of the village/town?
   Say/write what you will do.
Jamil's Big Brother is Getting Married

Look at the picture, and then read the dialogue (সংলাপ).

Mother : What are you doing there, Shafiq?
Shafiq : I'm packing my suitcase.
Mother : What time is your train?
Shafiq : 8.20. Don't worry mother. I'm going to stay with my best friend, Jamil.
Mother : But you're going to Chittagong for the first time.
Shafiq : OK. I promise I'll phone you when I get there.
Mother : I know you'll do that, but be careful even so.
Shafiq : I will, mother.
Mother : Be careful what you eat.
Shafiq : I will, mother.
Mother : Do you know where Jamil lives?
Shafiq : No, but Harun knows. Harun and I are going together. Jamil will probably be at the station to meet us.
Mother : When are you coming back?
Shafiq : The wedding is on Thursday. We're going to Cox's Bazar on Friday and hope to return to Chittagong the same day. And I'm coming back to Dhaka the following day.
Mother : OK. Take care.
Shafiq : I will, mother. Goodbye.
Mother : Goodbye.
Read and note.

wedding: বিয়ে, বিবাহ অনুষ্ঠান
We're: we are
the same day: ঐ দিনই
I'm: I am
the following day: পরের দিন
Take care: আন্তর্জাতিক ও বন্ধুবাদ্বয়কে বিদায় জানাবার সময় সাধারণত তাদের কথাটি বলা হয়। এটি অনেকটা “সাবধানে থেকো” এ রকম বোঝায়।

Read this sentence carefully.

1. Were going to Cox's Bazar on Friday.
   এখানে present continuous tense (we are going) ব্যবহার করা হয়েছে। কিন্তু এটি
   ভবিষ্যতের কোনো কাজ করা হবে এরপ বোঝাতে।
   এরো লক্ষ করে।
   এই ভবিষ্যত কাজটি
   (অর্থাৎ শফিক ও তার বন্ধু যে কোনো Cox's Bazar যাবে তা) আপনি থেকেই ঠিক করা
   আছে।

Now here is Mr Rahman's diary for the next week. Mr Rahman is the
head teacher of a school in Dhaka. Using the notes in his diary make 7
sentences. No. 2 is done for you as an example.

Example: He is seeing a dentist at 4.30 pm on Saturday Oct 5.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Day</th>
<th>Activity</th>
<th>Time</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Saturday Oct 5</td>
<td>see a dentist</td>
<td>4.30 pm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Sunday Oct 6</td>
<td>open a debating club at school</td>
<td>10 am</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Monday Oct 7</td>
<td>phone a friend in Khulna</td>
<td>1 pm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Tuesday Oct 8</td>
<td>He and Asst. Head teacher go to a meeting with chairman, Dhaka Board.</td>
<td>11.30 am</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Wednesday Oct 9</td>
<td>The Director General &amp; the Inspector of Schools visit the school</td>
<td>9 am</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Thursday Oct 10</td>
<td>Students stage (মঞ্চে করা) a play as part of the cultural-week programme</td>
<td>7.30 pm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Friday Oct 11</td>
<td>go shopping at New Market</td>
<td>9.30 am</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Again, read these sentences carefully.

9. I'm packing my suitcase.
10. I'm going to Jamil's house.
11. I'll phone you.

Future Actions
Now complete these sentences. Use the verbs in brackets in the right form. No. 12 is done for you.

12 A: What are you doing?
   B: I _______ (write) a letter to my friend.
      I'm writing a letter to my friend.

13 A: Oh it's very cold. I'm sorry I left the door open.
   B: OK. I _______ (shut) it.

14 Please don't disturb me. I _______ (study).

15 A: Oh I left my purse. But I have to buy some stamps.
   B: Don't worry, I _______ (give) you some.

16 A: Where's Kamal?
   B: He _______ (watch) TV.

17 Tomorrow my friend Kamal and I _______ (go) to Srimongal.

18 Oh my watch _______ (not/work)!
   I _______ (take) it to the repairer tomorrow.

19 Some people _______ (talk). I can't understand them.
   What language _______ they _______?

20 I'm hungry. I think I _______ (eat) supper early.

21 I _______ (go) to a meeting now. So I _______ (not/go) to see the film with you. I _______ probably _______ (come) back before 9 pm.

22 I'm so tired. I think I _______ (go) to bed now.

23 We can go out now. It _______ (not/rain).

24 A: Never sit on the roof of the train.
   B: I ________________________ .

Suppose your friend has come to visit you. He/She will stay only one week. She/he wants to see different places/people in your village/town/city. Now make plans for your visits to these places/people during the week. You can start:

There are many/a few interesting places/people in my village/town. On Saturday we're going to see . . .
A Busy Day

Read the dialogue.

Shafiq : What are you thinking, Alam?
Alam : I'm thinking about my cousins. They're coming to see us today. It's going to be a busy day for me. I think I'll make a list.

Shafiq : Shall I write it down for you?
Alam : Yes, please. Thanks.
Shafiq : OK. What are you going to do first?
Alam : First, I'm going to do some shopping. Mother wants to cook something special.
Shafiq : What are you going to buy?
Alam : Chicken, vegetables, hilsha fish, curd and some sweets. She's going to cook 'morog polau' and fried fish for lunch. Please join us at the meal.
Shafiq : Thank you. I will. I'm free today. I can help you with the shopping.
Alam : That's great! Thanks. Then after lunch, we're going to visit the Ahsan Manzil and Lalbag Fort.
Shafiq : OK. Will they visit any other places too?
Alam : No. They won't have time. In the evening BTV is showing a musical programme. They'll probably watch that. And then after dinner they are going to Sylhet on the 10.30 train.

Shafiq : Most of the time I will be with you.
Alam : Thanks a lot.
Shafiq : Not at all. Shall we go to shopping now?
Alam : Yes, Let's go.
Shafiq : Where shall we go?
Alam : To New Market.
Shafiq : I couldn't eat breakfast this morning. Our kitchen is closed today. The cook is sick. Shall we eat something before we go?
Alam : Of course.
**Read and note.**

something special : বিশেষ কিছু
curd : দই
a musical programme : একটি গানের অনুষ্ঠান
Thanks a lot : অনেক ধন্যবাদ
Not at all : এটি একটি প্রচলিত কথা। কেউ ধন্যবাদ দিয়ে উত্তরে Not at all বা You're welcome বা My pleasure ইত্যাদি বলা হয়ে থাকে।
closed : বদ্ধ
of course : অবশাই

**Read these sentences carefully.**

1. My cousin **are coming** to see us today.
2. I'm going to **do** some shopping.

**Lesson 2, Section C, Sentence 1**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>বাঙ্লা</th>
<th>ইংরেজি</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>১ম বাক্য : am / is / are + V-ing</td>
<td>I'm going to Khulna tomorrow.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eg He's giving a party tonight.</td>
<td>They're coming to see us today.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>২য় বাক্য : am / is / are + going to + V</td>
<td>I'm going to write a letter.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eg She's going to see a doctor.</td>
<td>It's going to rain.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>They're going to play football this afternoon.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Now look at the picture. This is a plan of a house. It has a number of rooms. First say and then write which room is going to be what (i.e. kitchen, bedroom, etc.) and then say and write what furniture/things you are going to make or buy for that room. You can use bedroom 1, bedroom 2, sitting room, bathroom, waiting room, dining room, kitchen, servant's room and guest room for the pictures. No. 1 is done for you.
This is going to be bedroom 1. We're going to buy a new bed for it.
Read these sentences carefully.

1 Shall I write it for you?
2 Shall we eat something before we go?

(Shall I ______? Shall we ______?)

Again, read this sentence carefully.

3 Will they visit other places too?

(Shall they ______? Will they ______?)

Now fill in the gaps with shall or will.

4 ________ you shut the door, please?
5 Shahed and I are going home together. He doesn't have enough money to go by plane. So he said, "____ we go by train?"
6 A: The music is very loud.
   B: ________ I turn it down?
7 I haven't got enough money. What ________ I do?
8 I haven't got a pen, but I have a pencil. ________ that do?
9 I like the shirt, but the colour isn't so nice. ________ I buy it, Kamal?
10 What did the weather forecast say? ________ it rain?
11 Tomorrow is Mina's birthday. What ________ you give her, Salma?
12 What ________ we do tomorrow?
13 ________ they come back tonight?
14 Where ________ you go now?
15 ________ we sit there for a while?
16 ________ she know her examination results?
A

Fill in the gaps with will and shall.

(A dialogue between two friends in a restaurant)
Salam : What (1) you have for breakfast?
Rafiq : I think (2) have something very light, like chapati and vegetables. What about you?
Salam : I (3) have the same as you.
Rafiq : (4) we order a drink first?
Salam : OK.
Rafiq : What (5) you have, tea or coffee?
Salam : Tea (6) be fine for me.
Rafiq : Umm ... I (7) have some coffee.
Salam : I can't see waiter. Who (8) take the order?
Rafiq : (9) I call one?
Salam : Look, here's one coming.

(Now they are eating their breakfast)
Salam : What (10) we do after breakfast?
Rafiq : We (11) go to the National Museum. We (12) be there for about an hour.
Salam : How (13) we go to there?
Rafiq : By taxi. It's very easy.
Salam : But taxis are very expensive in Dhaka.
Rafiq : Then how?
Salam : (14) we go by baby taxi?
Rafiq : OK.

B

Cross out (×) the wrong form of the verb. No. 1 has been done for you.

1 We will give/are giving a party on Sunday night.
2 It will rain/is going to rain as there are black clouds in the sky.
3 My friend was thirsty. So I said, "Will/Shall I get you some lemonade (লেমুনেড শরবৎ)"
4 You and your friend are waiting for the train. There is no room in the waiting room. There is an announcement : "The train will run/is running
two hours late." Your friend says, "What will/shall we do now? Will/Shall we go to a restaurant and have some tea?"

5  A : I'm very tired.
   B : OK. I will get/am going to get a rickshaw.

6  It's a nice evening. Will/Shall we go for a walk?

7  Oh I forgot to post the letter. It's too late now. I will post/am going to post it in the morning.

8  Mr Rahman has got sufficient (ওস্তেন্দ) experience (অভিজ্ঞতা). I'm sure he will get/is getting the job.

9  Jamal is sick. He won't pass/will never pass his examination.

10 When do you think they will be/are going to be back?

11 We will go/are going to Cox's Bazar next weekend.

12 A : I don't know how to use this camera.
    B : OK. I will show/am going to show you.

13 A : Where are you going?
    B : I will buy/am going to buy some sugar.

14 A : I need some writing paper.
    B : OK. I will go/am going to the shop and get you some.

C  

Fill in each gap with either will or am/is/are + going to

Monica : Hello Annie, It's Monica. Annie, could you join us at an Eid Reunion party at the Golden Palace next Friday?

Annie : Thanks for the invitation, Monica. I hope ___(1)___ be able to come. Oh, hang on. Umm I've an appointment with the dentist at 7 pm on the same day.

Monica : I'm sure it ___(2)___ be great fun. Most of our friends ___(3)___ come. The party ___(4)___ start at 7.30, but you can come later, because I think it ___(5)___ go on until midnight. However, the dinner ___(6)___ be at 9 pm. And we hope we ___(7)___ see you then.

Annie : I'm sorry Monica. After the dentist I have to come home because my English teacher ___(8)___ come and I ___(9)___ have some extra lessons from her.

Monica : Can't you do that tomorrow and keep Friday free?

Annie : I'm afraid I can't. Tomorrow evening I ___(10)___ study maths with my teacher. These few days I ___(11)___ be very busy, because the examination ___(12)___ be on Saturday.

Monica : OK. I ___(13)___ see you after your examination.
LESSON : 1

A
1 The young man is pushing his bicycle. (push-
2 a repairer.

C
1 c  2 a  3 d

D
7 will, bring  8 will, shut  9 will phone
10 will bring  11 will not go  12 will, come
13 won't  14 will, be  15 will help
16 will pass  17 will come  18 will visit

E
Write the answers and show them to your tutor.

LESSON : 2

C
3 He is opening a debating club at school on Sunday Oct 6 at 10 am.
4 He is phoning a friend in Khulna on Monday Oct 7 at 1 pm.
5 He and the assistant head teacher are going to a meeting with
chairman, Dhaka Board on Tuesday Oct 8 at 11.30 am.
6 The Director General and the Inspector of Schools are visiting the
school on Wednesday Oct 9 at 9 am.
7 The students are staging a play as part of the cultural week programme
on Thursday Oct 10 at 7.30 pm.
8 Mr Rahman is going shopping at New Market on Friday Oct 11 at
9.30 am.

D
13 will shut  14 am studying
15 will give  16 is watching
17 are going  18 is not working, will take
19 are talking, are, speaking  20 will eat
21 am going, will not go, will, come  22 will go
23 is not raining  24 won't

E
Write the answer and show that to your tutor.
LESSON : 3

2 This is going to be bedroom 2. We're going to buy another bed for it.
3 This is going to be the kitchen. We're going to buy a new oven for it.
4 This is going to be a bathroom. We're going to buy a basin for it.
5 This is going to be a waiting room. We're going to buy some chairs for it.
6 This is going to be the dining room. We're going to buy a dining table for it.
7 This is going to be a servant's room. We're going to buy a bed for it.
8 This is going to be a guest room. We're going to buy a bed and a chair for it.
9 This is going to be the sitting room. We're going to buy a set of sofa for it.

LESSON : 4

A
1 will 2 will 3 will
4 shall 5 will 6 will
7 will 8 will 9 shall
10 shall 11 will 12 will
13 shall 14 shall

B

The right form of the verbs are given below. Cross out (×) the other form of verbs in the exercise.

2 is going to rain 3 shall
4 is running, shall, shall 5 will get
6 shall 7 am going to post
8 will get 9 won't pass
10 will be 11 are going
12 will show 13 am going to buy
14 will go

C
1 will 2 will 3 are going to
4 will 5 will 6 will
7 will 8 will 9 am going to
10 am going to 11 will 12 is going to
13 will
Expressing Ability/Inability

Objectives

On Completion of this unit you will be able to –

• express ability and inability by using 'can' and 'cannot (can't)'
• substitute 'am/is/are + able to' with 'can' and 'am/is/are + unable to' with 'can't'
• make questions with 'can' and 'can't'

Overview

LESSON 1 : Moni

LESSON 2 : Mukta

LESSON 3 : Heera

LESSON 4 : Revision and Test

ANSWER KEY
Look at the picture and try to answer these questions orally.

1. Who is this girl?
2. Where is she going?
3. How is she going there?
I'm Moni. I'm a school girl. I'm a student in class 6. My school is a long way from home, about 2 kilometers. I go to school on foot. I can walk a long way and I don't get tired. I can do a lot more things.

I can skip with a rope for twenty minutes without a break. I can draw beautiful pictures, but I can't paint them. My sister, Mukta can. So she paints all my pictures. I can sing and my brother, Heera can play the 'tabla'. He can play the flute too, but he can't play the sitar. My father can, but he can't find time for it. He's a busy man. My mother can cook well, but she can't sing like me. We're a happy family, and we all love music.

Read and note.

I'm : I am
don't : do not
can't : cannot
he's : he is
we're : we are
on foot : walking
I can do a lot more things : I can do many things
rope : skipping rope
without a break : without stopping
tabla : a musical instrument used for keeping rhythm,
flute : बांसी
sitar : a musical instrument with strings
play : बाज़ान eg I can play the guitar
find time : get/manage time

True or false? If false, give the correct information.

1. Moni's school is 5 kilometers from home.
2. She can walk a long distance without getting tired.
3. She can draw and paint beautiful pictures.
4. Mukta can paint pictures.
5. Heera can play the flute and the sitar.
6. Her mother cannot sing.

Read B carefully and answer the questions first orally and then in writing.

1. How long can Moni skip with a rope?
2. What is Moni's sister's name?
3. How does she help Moni?
4. What can Moni's father play?
5. What can't Moni's mother do?
Read these sentences carefully.

1  Moni can skip with a rope for twenty minutes.
2  Arif can ride a bicycle.
3  Zareen can write a letter.
4  Zeeshan can read English.

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>She can't paint pictures.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>He can't drive a car.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>She can't post it.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>He can't read Arabic.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Now read these questions and answers:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Questions</th>
<th>Answers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Can he speak Arabic?</td>
<td>1 Yes, he can/No, he can't.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Can she write a letter?</td>
<td>2 Yes, she can/No, she can't.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Can they play tennis?</td>
<td>3 Yes, they can/No, they can't.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notice the use of 'can' at the beginning of a question. Answers generally end with 'can' or 'can't'.

G1 Read B again and make a list of things the following people can do, and can't do:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>can do</th>
<th>can't do</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Moni</td>
<td>can walk a long way</td>
<td>can't paint pictures</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mukta</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heera</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Father</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mother</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

G2 Make questions for the following answers:

1 Mina can read the newspaper.  
   Question: Can Mina read the newspaper?  
2 Mina can make her own dress.  
3 He can drive a long way.  
4 They can jump over the wall.  
5 She can type very fast.

G3 Now make a list of things you can do and things you can't do.

Example:  
1 I can make my bed, but I can't make a cup of tea.  
2
A

Look at the picture and answer these questions orally.
1. What is the girl doing?
2. The girl has read something very interesting in the newspaper. What do you think it is?

B

Read Mukta's story in section C and answer these questions with a tick mark (√).
1. Mukta was reading
   a) the sports news.
   b) the political news.
   c) an announcement in the newspaper.

2. Bangladesh Shilpakala Academy has organised a
   a) painting competition.
   b) magic competition.
   c) musical competition.

3. 'Juniors' means between the age of
   a) 11 and 13.
   b) 13 and 19.
   c) 14 and 20.
4 Mukta's teacher thinks her painting is
   a) good.
   b) fair.
   c) satisfactory.
5 Mukta entered the competition and won the
   a) consolation prize.
   b) first prize.
   c) second prize.

C Read Mukta's story.

MUKTA

Mukta was reading an announcement in the newspaper. It says :

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PAINTING COMPETITION FOR JUNIORS</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bangladesh Shilpakala Academy has organised a painting competition for juniors, between the age of 13 and 19 to celebrate the Bengali new century - 1400. The competition will be held on May 3, 1994 at the Academy premises at 10 am.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>If you can draw and paint, come and enter the competition.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Mukta jumped with excitement. She told her mother, "Mother, look here. There's a painting competition for juniors at the Shilpakala Academy. Can I go in for it?" Her mother replied with a question : "Can you draw pictures well enough for the competition?"

Mukta : Yes mother, I can draw and paint good pictures.
Mother : That's good. What sort of pictures can you draw?
Mukta : I can draw things like a village hat, a school at break, city life, a zoo, etc.
Mother : But you haven't shown me any of your pictures. Can you get some for me?
Mukta : Yes, I can. (After a few minutes she comes back with some of her pictures.) Here they are.
Mother : Hmm! That's good! . . . Ah, this is beautiful!
Mukta : My teacher says my painting is very good. So, can I enter the competition, please?
Mother : Yes, you can. Good luck!
Mukta : Thanks, mum.
Mukta joined the competition and won first prize.
**Read and note.**

- announcement : informing others about a certain decision; ঘোষণা
- celebrate : to observe; পালন করা
- premises : আড়িনা
- good enough : quite good
- sort of : kind of
- hat : হাট। একটি দিন বাসে।
- school at break : school during lunch/tiffin period
- good luck : when we say 'good luck' to someone, we hope that he/she will be successful.

**Answer the following questions first orally and then in writing.**

1. What was Mukta excited about?
2. Why did the Shilpakala Academy organise the painting competition?
3. When & where will the competition be held?
4. What sort of pictures can Mukta draw and paint?
5. What does Mukta's teacher say about her paintings?

**Read these sentences carefully. Notice how questions are made with can't.**

- Statement : Zareen can write with a pen, but Zeeshan can't.
- Question : Can't Zeeshan write with a pen?
- Statement : Asif can ride a bicycle, but can't swim.
- Question : Can't Asif swim?

**Now make questions from each of the following statements :**

1. Jamal can fly kites, but he can't make one.
2. Maneez can speak Arabic, but he can't speak English.
3. Seema can recite poems, but she can't write them.
4. Bats can see at night, but they can't see in the daylight.
5. Ayesha can cook curry, but she can't cook biriyani.
6. Birds can fly, but they can't swim.
7. Salam can play football, but he can't play chess.
8. Rahima can sew her own dress, but she can't knit a sweater.

**Now write ten sentences about yourself and your family following the pattern in section F.**
A

Look at the picture and try to answer these questions orally.

1. What is the boy on the stage doing?
2. What else do you think he can play?

B

Read Heera's story.

HEERA

Heera is a student in class 9. He studies science and is good at it. He can make a lot of things with pieces of magnet, wire, wood and nails. Last year at the Science Fair he made a Burglar Alarm. It was meant to keep away burglars. It was cheap and very useful. Everybody liked it very much.

This year at the annual cultural competition at school he played the flute. Everybody enjoyed it and he won the first prize. His classmates congratulated him for his brilliant performance.

Matin: Congratulations, Heera. Your performance was excellent. How can you play the flute so well?

Heera: I've got a very good teacher. Also because I practise for at least an hour everyday.

Samad: Can you play any other instruments?

Heera: Yes, I can. I can play the 'tabla' very well, and the sitar a little bit.

Samad: I want to learn the flute. Can you help me? My uncle has brought me one from the village hat.
Heera  :  Yes, I can. Come and see me when you're free.
Read and note.

| magnet: চুর্ণক | burglar alarm: an instrument with an alarm meant to inform people of a thief in the house. |
| wire: তার      | cheap: not very expensive. |
| wood: কাঠ      | annual: yearly. |
| nails: পেঁচাক | cultural: of the culture of a country, its songs, music, poetry, etc. |
| enjoyed it     | enjoyed it: got pleasure from it. |
| congratulated him | congratulated him: thanked him for his success. |
| excellent      | excellent: very, very good. |
| instruments:   | instruments: musical instruments. |

Read B again and write 5 correct statements about Heera from the table given below. The first one is done for you:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Heera</th>
<th>can</th>
<th>can't</th>
<th>play</th>
<th>make</th>
<th>sing</th>
<th>a lot of things</th>
<th>the tabla very well</th>
<th>a Burglar Alarm</th>
<th>the sitar very well</th>
<th>like Moni.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heera</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Heera can make a lot of things.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Now read B again and answer the following questions first orally and then in writing.

1. Which class is Heera in?
2. What is he good at?
3. What does he need to make different things for the Science Fair?
4. What happened at the annual cultural competition this year?
5. Why can he play the flute so well?
6. Where did Samad get the flute from?
Read these sentences carefully.

1. a) Shimul is able to paint beautiful pictures.
   b) Shimul can paint beautiful pictures.

2. a) The horse is able to run fast.
   b) The horse can run fast.

3. a) Rahim is unable to speak.
   b) Rahim can't speak.

4. a) Ayesha is unable to do hard work.
   b) Ayesha can't do hard work.

In all these sentences we find two ways of saying the same things: is able to/can, and is unable to/can't.

Now rewrite these sentences using can/can't.

1. Hanif is able to play cricket very well.
2. Seema is unable to prepare good Chinese dishes.
3. Rina is unable to carry such a big load.
4. Tariq is able to get a good job.
5. Nira is able to do all the washing.
6. Adeeb is unable to drive the car.
7. Rahat is unable to write stories.
8. The monkey is able to jump from one tree to another.

Read the chart carefully and make ten true sentences about yourself using can/can't.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1. write with both hands</th>
<th>2. draw picture</th>
<th>3. drive a car</th>
<th>4. ride a bicycle</th>
<th>5. sew a button on my dress/shirt</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>6. work with a computer</td>
<td>7. cut a pineapple</td>
<td>8. skip with a rope</td>
<td>9. cook chicken curry</td>
<td>10. walk a long way very easily</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Example:
1. I can't write with both hands.
2. .................................................................
3. .................................................................
4. .................................................................
5. .................................................................
6. .................................................................
7. .................................................................
8. .................................................................
9. .................................................................
10. .................................................................
A Maneez is a little boy of 8. He is member of a circus. He can do a lot of things. But there are certain things he can't do. 

*Now look at the pictures below and write sentences about the things Maneez can do, and the things he can't do.*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>can do</th>
<th>can't do</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. swim for hours at a time</td>
<td>2. ride a monocycle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. carry a ball on his head without using his hands</td>
<td>4. walk on a rope</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. roll in a drum</td>
<td>6. pass through a ring of fire</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Look at the statements in section A about things Maneez can do, and things he can't do. Now make five questions with can and five with can't about Maneez.

Example:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>can</th>
<th>can't</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Can Maneez swim for hours at a time?</td>
<td>1 Can't Maneez ride a monocycle?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Suppose you are a new student in a college. You want to know your friend better. Ask her/him six questions with *can* and six questions with *can't*.

Example:

1. Can you write poems?
2. 
3. 
4. 
5. 
6. 

Rewrite the following sentences using *can* and *can't* instead of the phrases underlined.

1. Moni is able to skip for a long time.
2. Jamal is able to sing like TV singers.
3. The doctor is unable to understand the patient.
4. The patient is unable to express her feelings.
5. Shuman is able to use the camera.
6. Bangladesh is able to hold international games.
7. Sheila is unable to travel by bus.

Now write ten sentences about yourself mentioning the things you can do, and things you can't do.
LESSON : 1

A
1. This is a school girl.
2. She is going to school.
3. She is going to school on foot.

B
2. True.
3. False. She can only draw pictures but she can't paint.
4. True.
5. False. He can play the tabla and the flute, but not the sitar.
6. True.

E
1. Moni can skip with a rope for twenty minutes without a break.
3. She paints all the pictures that Moni draws.
4. He can play the sitar.
5. She can't sing like Moni.

G1
\[
\begin{array}{|c|c|c|}
\hline
\text{Name} & \text{can do} & \text{can't do} \\
\hline
\text{Mukta} & \text{can paint pictures} & \text{can't sing.} \\
\text{Heera} & \text{can play the tabla and the flute} & \text{can't play the sitar.} \\
\text{Father} & \text{can play the sitar} & \text{can't find time to play the sitar regularly.} \\
\text{Mother} & \text{can cook well} & \text{can't sing like Moni.} \\
\hline
\end{array}
\]

G2
2. Can Mina make her own dress?
3. Can he drive a long way?
4. Can they jump over the wall?
5. Can she type very fast?

LESSON : 2

A
1. The girl is talking to her mother in the bedroom with a newspaper in her hand.
2. The girl has read an advertisement in the newspaper about a painting competition which she could enter.

B
1 (c) 2 (a) 3 (b) 4 (a) 5 (b)
Mukta was excited about the painting competition.
The Shilpakala Academy organised the competition to celebrate the Bengali new century- 1400.
The competition will be held at the Shilpakala Academy premises on May 3, 1994.
Mukta can draw and paint different types of pictures like a village hat, a school at break, city life, a zoo, etc.
Mukta's teacher says that her painting is very good.

Can't Jamal make kites?
Can't Maneez speak English?
Can't Seema write poems?
Can't bats see in the daylight?
Can't Ayesha cook biriyani?
Can't birds swim?
Can't Salam play chess?
Can't Rahima knit a sweater?

LESSON : 3

He is playing the flute.
He can perhaps play the tabla, mouth organ, harmonium, etc.

Heera can make a Burglar Alarm.
Heera can't sing like Moni.
Heera can play the sitar very well.
Heera can't play the tabla very well.

Heera is in class 9.
He is good at Science.
To make different things for the Science Fair he needs things like pieces of magnet, wire, wood and nails.
At the annual cultural competition this year Heera played the flute and won the first prize.
Heera can play the flute very well because he has a very good teacher to help him, and also because he practises for an hour everyday.
Samad's uncle brought him a flute from the village hat.

Hanif can play cricket very well.
Seema can't prepare good Chinese dishes.
Rina can't carry such a big load.
Tariq can get a good job.
Nira can do all the washing.
6 Adeeb can't drive the car.
7 Rahat can't write stories.
8 The monkey can jump from one tree to another.

Write the answers and show them to your tutor.

LESSON : 4

A
1 Maneez can swim for hours at a time.
2 He can't ride a monocycle.
3 He can carry a ball on his head without using his hands.
4 He can't walk on a rope.
5 He can roll in a drum.
6 He can't pass through a ring of fire.
7 He can get on his father's shoulder while he is riding a bicycle.
8 He can't walk on a pair of stilts.
9 He can stand on his head with his legs in the air.
10 He can't carry a table with his legs up.

B
2 Can Maneez carry a ball on his head without using his hands? Can't he walk on a rope?
3 Can he roll in a drum? Can't he pass through a ring of fire?
4 Can he get on his father's shoulder while he is riding a bicycle? Can't he walk on a pair of stilts?
5 Can he stand on his head with his legs in the air? Can't he carry a table with his legs up?

C
Some examples:
1 Can you sing?
2 Can you dance?
3 Can you drive a car?
4 Can't you stay at home all by yourself?
5 Can't you give her some money?
6 Can't you buy a new watch?

D
1 Moni can skip for a long time.
2 Jamal can sing like TV singers.
3 The doctor can't understand the patient.
4 The patient can't express her feelings.
5 Shuman can use the camera.
6 Bangladesh can hold international games.
7 Sheila can't travel by bus.

Write the sentences and show them to your tutor.
Making Requests/Asking and Giving Permission

Objectives

On Completion of this unit you will be able to –

- use 'can' and 'could' to ask for permission and make requests
- give or refuse permission and respond to requests

Overview

LESSON 1 : Planning a Picnic
LESSON 2 : Nishu and Her Bag
LESSON 3 : Patenga Beach
LESSON 4 : Revision and Test

ANSWER KEY
Planning A Picnic

A

Look at the picture and try to answer these questions orally.
1. What can you see in the picture?
2. Would you like to go to a picnic? If yes, where and when would you go?

B

Read the story carefully.

PLANNING A PICNIC

Maliha and Saleha are good friends. They are in the same class. They visit each other at weekends. On one such occasion when Saleha was on her way to Maliha's place, she saw a bus parked on one side of the road. The banner on it read:

Home Economics College, Dhaka
Annual Picnic
Venue: Kotbari, Comilla
Date: Dec. 25, 1994
That gave her an idea.
At Maliha's house the two friends sat and talked over a cup of tea.

Saleha : Maliha, I find life boring.
        Why don't we do something?
Maliha : That's right. Do you have anything interesting in mind?
Saleha : Yes, how about a picnic?
Maliha : That's a good idea. Where?
Saleha : Say, Sonargaon, we'll fix all that up in school.
Maliha : But first, I must get my mother's permission.
Saleha : Right, I must do the same.

A few days later, before going to school Maliha talked to her mother about it.
Maliha : Mother, our class is planning to go for a picnic next Friday.
        Can I join them?
Mother : Where will you be going?
Maliha : To Sonargaon. We want to visit the museum there.
Mother : Will your teachers be going too?
Maliha : Yes mother, all our teachers. Class 9 students also want to come along. So it's a combined picnic for Classes 9 and 10.
Mother : All right. You can go.

Read and note.

weekends : the end of every week, i.e. Friday in our country.
on one such occasion : on an occasion like this, i.e. on a Friday.
Maliha's place : Maliha's house.
a bus parked : a bus waiting/stopped.
banner : A piece of cloth on which a slogan or some information is written (or a picture).
annual : yearly.
venue : place where something happens.
over a cup of tea : while having a cup of tea.
boring : uninteresting, বিরক্তিকর, একথেয়ে
How about ...? : a way of proposing an idea.
say : suppose.
Can I join them? : a good way of asking (for) permission.
combined : joined together.
Read B again and choose the correct answer.

1. Maliha and Saleha visit each other
   a) every month.
   b) at the weekends.
   c) everyday.

2. One day, on her way to Maliha's house, Saleha saw
   a) a bus parked on one side of the road.
   b) an accident between a car and a bus.
   c) some people carrying a banner.

3. It was Saleha who proposed that
   a) she and Maliha should go shopping.
   b) Maliha should get her mother's permission.
   c) they should go for a picnic.

4. The school picnic was supposed to be held at
   a) Kotbari, Comilla.
   b) Home Economics College, Dhaka.
   c) Sonargaon, Dhaka.

5. The first thing the two girls must do about going for a picnic is to
   a) get their mother's permission.
   b) select a date and venue for the picnic.
   c) decide on what they should wear.

6. The reason for selecting Sonargaon as a venue for the school picnic is that
   a) many students live around that place.
   b) the students want to visit the museum there.
   c) it is not far from school.

Read B again and answer the questions first orally and then in writing.

1. How have Maliha and Saleha become good friends?
2. Where were the students of Home Economics College going?
3. Where did Maliha and Saleha make the final plan for the picnic?
4. When will they go for a picnic?
5. What made Maliha's mother give her daughter permission to go for the picnic?
### Read the sentences carefully.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Situation</th>
<th>Asking for permission</th>
<th>Reply</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Rehana wants to have chocolate. She asks her mother</td>
<td>Mother, can I have a chocolate, please?</td>
<td>No, you can't.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Sajan wants to go to his friend's birthday party. He asks his mother</td>
<td>Mother, Can I go to Asif's birthday party?</td>
<td>Yes, you can.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Mita wants to borrow her friend's pen. She asks</td>
<td>Can I borrow your pen, please?</td>
<td>Yes, you can.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 Raihan wants to play with a knife. He asks his father</td>
<td>Father, can I play with this knife?</td>
<td>No, you can't.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 Abed wants to use his boss, Mr Rahman's calculator. He asks</td>
<td>Could I use your calculator, sir?</td>
<td>Yes, you can.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 The students of Class 8 want to use their classroom after school hours for music lessons. They ask the headmistress</td>
<td>Madam, could we use our classroom after school hours for music lessons please?</td>
<td>No, you can't.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 Mr Huq's neighbour is suddenly ill. Mrs Jamal wants to take him to hospital immediately. But she can't get an ambulance or any public transport. So Mr. Huq's permission to use his car.</td>
<td>Mr Huq, could we use your car, please, to take Mr Jamal to hospital?</td>
<td>Yes, you can.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the situations given above notice how **Can I/Could I/we** is used to take permission and to give or refuse permission. In both cases the answer is **Can/Can't, i.e., Yes, you can/No, you can't.**

### Read the situations below. Use **Can I/Could I** to ask for permission / make requests and give appropriate answers with **Yes/No**.

1. Luna wants to give her skipping rope to her friend, Kanta. She asks her mother ........................................ .
2. Rana wants to borrow his friend Jamil's motorbike. He asks ................................................................. .
3. Maneez wants to make a phone call from Mr Rahman's office. He says .......................................................... .
4. Jafar wants to have a cup of tea. He says ...................... .
5. Seema wants to go to the Cinema. She asks her mother ................................................................. .

### Write five situations in your daily life in which you need to get permission using can/could. Also write appropriate answers.
Nishu and Her Bag

Lesson 2

A

Look at the picture. Say the names of all the objects/things you can see in it.

B

Read Nishu's story carefully.

Nishu was travelling by train from Dhaka to Chittagong. She was carrying a big suitcase and a bag of gifts for her mother, four brothers and three sisters. She had come from New York, USA to attend the wedding of her younger brother, Maqsood.

The train started moving. Nishu could see the trees, the green paddy fields and some little boys fishing. They all seemed to run in the opposite direction. Nishu wanted to be a little more comfortable. She could not find room for her feet because her bag was in the way. She tried to move it, but it was too heavy. She asked the man on the other seat to help her.

"Excuse me. Please could you put my bag on the upper berth, there?" she said. The man readily agreed "Sure", he replied. Then he lifted the bag up and put it on the berth. Nishu thanked him and asked his name. "Kamal", he said.
Nishu and Kamal talked for quite some time. At one stage of their conversation, they discovered they were related. Kamal was a distant cousin to Nishu. He was a close friend of her uncle, Eshan. He asked Nishu, "Could you give me Eshan's address please, I haven't seen him for ages". "Oh sure", came the prompt reply. Nishu then took out her diary from her bag and gave him the address.

Read and note.

upper berth : in a railway compartment it is the upper seat on which people sleep on night journeys.
readily : immediately/without discussion
lifted the bag up : ো ঘটিত উপরে তুলেন।
conversation : আলাপচারিতা
discovered : came to know/found out
prompt : quick
for ages : for a very long time

Read Nishu's story is section B and write T for true, and F for false statements. If false, give the correct answer.

1 Nishu was travelling from Dhaka to Sylhet.
   T

2 She was carrying a big suitcase and a handbag.
   T

3 She had come to attend the wedding of her elder brother, Maqsood.
   T

4 Nishu asked Kamal to help her with her bag.
   F

5 Kamal asked for Nishu's address.
   F

Read the story at section B and rearrange these sentences in the correct order.

1 They talked for some time.
2 Nishu wanted to be a little more comfortable, but she couldn't because of her bag.
3 Kamal asked for Ehsan's address.
4 The train started moving.
5 Nishu took out a diary from her bag and gave him the address.
6 She asked for help.
7 Through the window Nishu could see a lot of things that seemed to run in the opposite direction.
8 The man on the other seat helped her put her bag on the upper berth.
9 They discovered that they were related.
10 Nishu asked the man his name and he replied, "Kamal".
Read the following situations and requests carefully.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Situations</th>
<th>Requests</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1  Mr Zaman wants to find out at a bank counter if five taka notes will be banned. The man at the counter replies with a request.</td>
<td>Could you find it out from the head office, please?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2  A newcomer in Jhenidah wants to know the way to the post office.</td>
<td>Could you tell me the way to the post office, please?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3  A lady is looking for the principal's room. She asks the college bearer.</td>
<td>Excuse me, could you please show me the principal's room?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4  A student in class 5 is not feeling well. He goes to the Headmaster and says,</td>
<td>Sir, could you please phone my mother and ask her to come and take me home?</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the situations given above we notice how polite requests are made to people (strangers, seniors/bosses etc.). Notice also the use of **please** with **could you ...**.

Now make requests for the situations given below:

**Situations:**
1  Badal is a newcomer in Rangpur. He wants to know the way to Carmichael College.
2  Rokeya has arranged a party for her colleagues. She wants Seema to phone Mr Salam and find out if he will be coming.
3  Mrs Hussain is a doctor. She isn't at home when the fish vendor comes. She requests Mrs Khan, her neighbour, to buy some fish for her.
4  A little boy is suffering from a breathing problem. His mother asks the doctor if he could give her son medicine for his cold.
5  A concerned father asks the class teacher to show his son's exercise book to him.

Read the last three paragraphs of the text in B and find out the situations and the language used to make requests and give answers.

Now think of five situations in your life in which you made requests to others. Use 'Could you, please . . . ?' and the answers.
A

Think of a visit to the sea-side/beach. Look at the flower below and fill in the petals with words related to the sea shore/beach. One is done for you.

B

Read the story carefully.

PATENGA BEACH

Nishu and her family went to spend an evening at Patenga Beach in Chittagong. They were a big group of ten – five grown-ups, three teenagers, and two children, Saif and Sama. Their mother Sakina and father Latif were also in the group. Nishu’s sister Mita and her two sons, Yusuf and Yunus, were also with them. The two boys took their football and started playing with it on the smooth, sandy beach. Saif and Sama started running, and their mother also ran with them. Nishu, Mita and her husband walked close to the water. They enjoyed the sea wind. Their noses became cold and their lips felt dry. The waves washed their feet, giving them a pleasant feeling.
The beach was crowded with visitors in colourful clothes. Nishu looked at the people around her, and then she looked at the blue waters of the Bay of Bengal. She turned to her sister and said, "Mita, look at the ships over there. Don't they look like paper boats floating on a big tub?" Mita was cracking peanuts. She offered some to Nishu and her husband. She replied, "Yes, they do, especially against the horizon. Why don't you write a poem about them?" Mita's husband, Kaiser added, "Yes Nishu, can you write a poem for me, please? "I'll frame it and think of you when you're not with us". Nishu smiled and replied, "I'll try to do what you ask". Then she added, "But you'll have to do what I want first". "What is it?" asked Kaiser. "Can you take a picture of the two of us against the setting sun, and another picture of the crabs running in and out of their holes?" requested Nishu. "Certainly, my camera is loaded, and I can take as many pictures as you want," replied Kaiser. Nishu thanked him.

**Read and note.**

- grown-ups: adults
- teenagers: peoples whose age is between 13 and 19
- smooth: not rough, like silk
- pleasant: good
- big tub: a large vessel, usually round, used for washing clothes or giving babies a bath.
- cracking peanuts: চিনাবাদাম ভাঙা
- horizon: seem to meet
- crabs: কঁকরা
- loaded: It means here: the camera now contains a new reel of film.

**Read and choose the best answer.**

1. Nishu and her family went to Patenga Beach to spend
   a) a weekend.
   b) an evening.
   c) a holiday.

2. The ten people in the group are
   a) 3 grown-ups, 5 teenagers and 2 children.
   b) 4 grown-ups, 3 teenagers, and 3 children.
   c) 5 grown-ups, 3 teenagers, and 2 children.

3. Saif and Sama are the children of
   a) Sakina and Latif.
   b) Mita and Kaiser.
   c) Misha and Khokon.
4 The sea wind felt cold. This is clear from the sentence
   a) 'They enjoyed the sea wind.'
   b) 'Their noses became cold and their lips felt dry'.
   c) 'The waves washed their feet'.

5 Patenga Beach stands on the
   a) Indian Ocean.
   b) River Padma.
   c) Bay of Bengal.

6 Mita and Kaiser requested Nishu to
   a) write a poem.
   b) take a picture.
   c) tell them an interesting story.

7 'Can you take a picture of the two of us?' Here "the two of us" means
   a) Sakina and Latif.
   b) Yunus and Nishu.
   c) Mita and Nishu.

Answer these questions first orally and then in writing.
1 Nishu went to Patenga Beach in a group of ten people. Who were the other nine people in the group?
2 Who are Yusuf and Yunus? Which age group do they belong to?
3 What did Mita offer Nishu and Kaiser?
4 What two pictures did Nishu request Kaiser to take?
5 Did Kaiser do what she asked?

Read these sentences carefully.
1 Can you shut the window, please?
2 Rabeya, can you give me a cup of tea?
3 Can you wait till I come back?
4 Can you go to the bank and pay my electricity bill?

Notice the use of can to make requests in the sentences above. In sentence 1, the word, please is used to make the request seem more polite. The other three sentences without please are also requests. Can you is used to make requests in informal situations when the answer expected is more positive.

Go back to section B and find out the language used to make requests. How many requests can you find in the text? Write them down.
Read the following situations and make requests for each case. Use Can you ...?

Situations:
1. Shaheen asks her husband to take their baby, Tania, for a walk.
2. Novera asked her friend to come to the party at 5:00 so that they could finish the rest of the work together.
3. Amreen asks her brother Shayer to turn off the TV.
4. Russel asks his mother for a ten taka note.
5. Naveed asks Zeeshan to bring his football for the game.
6. Sameer wants Naushad to show him his album.
7. Tilat wants to learn from Zeba how to prepare egg noodles.

Example:
1. Can you take Tania for a walk?
2.
3.
4.
5.
6.
7.

Now make five requests with Can you ...? to your parents and friends. Write them down.
For each of the following situations use Can I or Could I/We to ask and to give or refuse permission.

1. After the party Zareen wants to open her presents. She asks her mother

2. Kamran wants to go out and play football. He asks his mother

3. Bela wants to wear her mother's saree at the wedding party. She asks her mother

4. Shaila wants to borrow her friend's pencil. She asks her friend

5. Meher wants to take Tameem to her friend's place. She asks Tameem's mother for permission

6. Mr Hasan asks permission from the Chairman to start the meeting. He says

Use Could you/Can you to make requests in the following situations. Also give appropriate answers.

1. Mr Matin asks his neighbours to stop shouting at each other.

2. Mrs Matin looked at her son's report card and found some problems with certain marks. She requested the Headmaster to show her his maths and English answer scripts.

3. Sureya and Mr Brown will both attend a meeting in the evening. Sureya asks Mr Brown to pick her up at 5:00. Mr Brown agrees.

4. Shezan is listening to very loud music. Ali is studying for his exams. So he asks Shezan to turn down the volume (sound). Shezan refuses.

5. Use the situations in '4', but this time Ali's father is making the same request to Shezan's father who agrees to turn down the volume.

6. Zeeshan's mother asks him to get her a pen and some paper.

7. The Rahmans are going to spend their winter holidays in Cox's Bazar. They ask their neighbour, Tareque to look after their house till they come back. Tareque agrees.

8. Asif and Arif are fighting for a balloon. Asif has snatched Arif's balloon. Their mother asks Asif to give it back to Arif. Asif refuses.
LESSON : 1

A

1 A road. A girl on a rickshaw, and a picnic bus on the other side of the road. A queue of girls getting on the picnic bus.
2 Yes, I would. I would like to go to _____ this winter.

E

1 Maliha and Saleha are both in the same class. So they meet each other in class everyday and have become good friends. They meet each other at the weekends too.
2 The students of Home Economics College were going for a picnic to Kotbari, Comilla.
3 Maliha and Saleha made the final plan for the picnic with their teacher and others in school.
4 They will go for a picnic next Friday.
5 Maliha's mother gave her daughter permission to go for the picnic when she heard that her teachers would be going to the picnic too.

G

1 Mother, can I give Kanta my skipping rope?
   — Yes, you can.
2 Jamil, can I borrow your motorbike please?
   — No, you can't.
3 Could I use your telephone please?
   or
   Could I make a phone call please?
   — Yes, you can.
4 Can I have a cup of tea please?
   — Yes, you can.
5 Mother, can I go to the cinema please?
   — No, you can't.
Some examples:
1  Mother I'm going to school. Can you give me some money?
   — No, I can't.
2  This curry is testless. Can you pass me the salt?
3  Sir, my pen is not working. Could I borrow your pen please?
   — Yes, you can.
4  Excuse me, could you tell me the way to the post office please?
   — Yes, I can.
5  Can I have some hot water for a bath?
   — No, you can't. Wait till I finish cooking.

LESSON : 2

Suggested answer:
In the picture I can see a young lady, a young man and some other passengers in a railway compartment. Through the window we can see a few trees and paddy field.

1. F. Dhaka to Chittagong
2. T.
3. F. Younger brother.
4. T.
5. F. For Ehsan's address.

(Sentences rearranged according to sequence)
1. The train started moving.
2. Through the window Nishu could see a lot of things that seemed to run in the opposite direction.
3. Nishu wanted to be a little more comfortable, but she couldn't because of her bag.
4. She asked for help.
5. The man on the other seat helped her put her bag on the upper berth.
6. Nishu asked the man his name and he replied, "Kamal."
7. They talked for sometime.
8. They discovered that they were related.
9. Kamal asked for Ehsan's address.
10. Nishu took out a diary from her bag and gave him the address.
SSC Programme

Excuse me. Could you please tell me the way to Carmichael College?
Could you please ring up/phone Mr Salam and find out if he will be coming?
Could you please buy some fish for me?
Could you please give my son some medicine for his cold?
Could you please show me his exercise book?

(On two situations requests are made)
1 Nishu wanted to put her bag on the upper berth but she couldn't because it was too heavy. So she asked Kamal, "Excuse me. Could you please put my bag on the upper berth, there?"
2 Kamal wanted to know the address of his friend, Ehsan's address? So he asked Nishu, "Could you please give me Ehsan's address? I haven't seen him for ages".

Do your work and show it to your tutor.

LESSON : 3

(Other words related to the sea-side are)
sand  sea  wind  roar
waves  sea shells  crabs, etc.

1 b  2 c  3a  4b  5 c  6a  7c

The other nine people who went to Patenga Beach with Nishu were Sakina, Latif and their two children, Saif and Sama, Mita, her husband Kaiser and their two sons, Yusuf and Yunus. The other person whose name is not mentioned in the story is perhaps another teenager who is a friend of Yusuf and Yunus, because "three teenagers" are mentioned in the story.

Yusuf and Yunus are the sons of Nishu's sister Mita and her husband Kaiser. Yusuf and Yunus are teenagers.
3 Mita offered some peanuts to Nishu and Kaiser.

4 The two pictures that Nishu asked her brother-in-law, Kaiser to take were:
   a) a picture of Nishu and her sister, Mita against the setting sun, and
   b) a picture of the crabs running in and out of their holes.

5 Yes, he did.

Requests made in the story are:

— Kaiser asked Nishu to write a poem for him. He said, 'Can you write a poem for me, please?'
— Nishu asked Kaiser to take two pictures: one of her with her sister, and one of the crabs. She said, "Can you take a picture of the two of us against the setting sun, and another of the crabs running in and out of their holes?"

2 Can you come to the party at 5:00 so that we can finish the rest of the work together?
3 Shayer, can you turn the TV off?
4 Mother, can you give me a ten taka note?
5 Zeeshan, can you bring your football for the game?
6 Naushad, can you show me your album?
7 Zeba, can you show me how to prepare egg noodles?

Do your work and show it to your tutor.

LESSON : 4

1 Mother, can I open my presents now?
   — Yes, you can.
2 Mother, can I go out and play football?
   — No, you can't. It's too early.
3 Mother, can I wear your saree at the wedding party please?
   — Yes, you can, but see that you don't spoil it.
4 Can I borrow your pencil please?
   — No, you can't. I'm using it.
5 Can I take Tameem to my friend's place?
   — Yes, you can.
6 Sir, could we start the meeting now?
   — Yes, please.

S
1 Could you please stop shouting at each other?
   — All right.
2 Could you show me my son's Math and English answer scripts please?
   — No, I can't. It's against school rules.
3 Mr Brown, could you pick me up at 5:00 for the meeting please?
   — Yes, I can.
4 Shezan, can you listen to the music quietly? I'm studying for my exams.
   — No. I can't.
5 Could you ask your son to turn down the volume? My son is studying for his exams.
   — Yes, all right.
6 Zeeshan, can you get me a pen and some paper?
   — Yes, I can, mother.
7 Tareque, can you look after our house till we come back from Cox's Bazar?
   — Yes, I can.
8 Asif, can you give the balloon back to Arif?
   — No. I found it under the bed.
Expressing Obligation/Compulsion

Objectives

On Completion of this unit you will be able to –

- express compulsion using 'must' and 'mustn't'
- use 'should' and 'shouldn't' to express obligation
- use 'have to' in different tenses to express obligation and to make negative sentences.

Overview

LESSON 1  : A Bicycle for Maneez

LESSON 2  : Tara's Garden

LESSON 3  : Sewing a New Dress

LESSON 4  : Revision and Test

ANSWER KEY
A Bicycle for Maneez

A

Look at the picture and answer these questions orally. Then read the story.
1. What is the mother doing?
2. What is the boy doing?
3. Why is he doing so?

A Bicycle for Maneez

Maneez always wanted to have a bicycle of his own. Most of his friends have their own bicycles. They sometimes let him use theirs, and sometimes don't. That often gets him down.

One day after breakfast when his mother was busy making a shopping list, Maneez hugged her from behind and softly made a request.

Maneez: Mother, can I ask you for something?
Mother: Yes, you can. Now, what is it?
Maneez: Can you buy me a good bicycle? All my friends have their own.
Mother: Yes, I'll buy you one, but on one condition.
Maneez: What is it, mother?
Mother: You must study hard.
Maneez: I am studying hard, mother.
Mother: It's not enough. I've seen your progress report. You must try hard to do better.
Maneez: OK mother. I'll try, but you must buy me the bicycle.
Mother: All right. But from now on you mustn't waste any time.
Maneez went back to his studies. He thought of what his mother said. Then he concentrated on his studies.

Read and Note.

gets him down: make him feel bad about something
shopping list: a list of things to be bought
hugged: hold somebody tight to show love and affection
waste: make no use of, অপচয় করা

Match the phrases in Column A with those in Column B.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A</th>
<th>B</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Maneez wanted to</td>
<td>a but on one condition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Most of his friends</td>
<td>b have a bicycle of his own</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Maneez hugged his mother</td>
<td>c have their own bicycles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 He requested his mother</td>
<td>d and softly made a request</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 She agreed to buy him a bicycle</td>
<td>e to buy him a good bicycle</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

eg.
1(b) Maneez wanted to have a bicycle of his own.
2 ............................................................................... .
3 ............................................................................... .
4 ............................................................................... .
5 ............................................................................... .

Answer the following questions first orally and then in writing.

1 Maneez often feels sad. What gets him down?
2 What did Maneez do before asking his mother for a bicycle?
3 What condition did his mother make?
4 How did he respond to his mother's condition?

Read the following sentences carefully.

1 Shad, you **must** go to bed now.
2 Zeba, you **mustn't** sleep in the classroom.
3 I **must** go to school and collect a copy of the admission form.
4 Rahima **mustn't** eat chocolates everyday.
5 You **must** check your ticket before you get on the train.

'**Mustn't**' can be used to give strong advice or orders to people.
Now look at the pictures and write a sentence with 'must' and a sentence with 'mustn't' against each of these pictures. (use any persons, I, you, he, she, we, they)
Read section B and find sentences with 'must'.

Now write ten sentences about yourself. Use must/mustn't.

Examples:
1 I must study now.
2 I mustn't study late at night.
3 .................................................................
4 .................................................................
5 .................................................................
6 .................................................................
7 .................................................................
8 .................................................................
9 .................................................................
10 .................................................................
Look at the picture and answer the questions first orally and then in writing.

1. Identify the owner of this garden.
2. What should you do to make a beautiful garden?

Read the story carefully.

TARA'S GARDEN

Tara is a university student of botany. She loves her subject and enjoys studying it. In class she learns about the structure and nature of plants. At home she spends a lot of time gardening as it is her hobby. Her parents and younger sister, Sara, spend their evenings in the garden too. She has a very good collection of flowers, and they make her garden bright and colourful.

The other day her father, Mr Mansur Ahmed, brought her a krishnachura sapling and some young rose plants. Tara was very happy to get them. She thanked her father and put the plants against the wall. She told Sara not to play near her plants. Then she went to get her gardening tools to plant them. When she came back she found one of her young rose bushes lying on the earth. It was crumpled and damaged. She was so upset to see this that she asked her mother in a very harsh tone,

"Mother, how did this happen?"
"It must be Sara. She was playing there," said her mother. Tara looked at her sister angrily and sat down near her plants. Her eyes were full of tears. She tried to straighten the leaves and fix the bent stem.

Sara looked at her sister helplessly, not knowing what to do. Her mother said to her, "Sara, you should say sorry to your sister. You shouldn't run carelessly. Why did you go near the plants?" Sara turned to her mother and said, "Mother, I didn't mean to hurt her plants. I was just running after a butterfly." "All right, now go and say sorry to her," said her father.

"Sorry sister, I won't do it again," said Sara.

Tara was still in tears and she turned her face away. Sara then complained, "Father, she's still angry with me." Mr Ahmed then walked up to Tara, patted her, and said, "You should forgive your sister. She didn't mean to hurt your plants. You shouldn't make her feel more guilty." Tara looked up and gave her sister a smile.

Read and note.

botany : a science subject that studies the structure and nature of plants

collection of flowers : varieties of flowers collected from different sources

sapling : young tree (চারা)

young rose bushes : গোলাপের চারা

gardening tools : instruments for gardening

crumpled : crushed into folds (দোমড়ানো, মোচড়ানো)

upset : mentally disturbed (মানসিকভাবে বিচলিত, বিপর্য্যস্ত) sad and angry

harsh tone : rough voice (করকশ স্বর)
patted her : touched her with open hand to show love and affection

guilty : showing or feeling that one has done wrong

Read B (first two paragraphs only) and choose the correct answer.

1. Tara is a student of
   a. botany.
   b. zoology.
   c. chemistry.

2. The word, 'botany' means-
   a. the study of boat building.
   b. the study of plants.
   c. the study of animals.

3. Tara's garden looks
   a. just green.
   b. dull and colourless.
   c. beautiful and colourful.

4. Mr Ahmed brought Tara
   a. a pine sapling and some young sunflower plants.
   b. a mango sapling and some young marigold plants.
c. a krishnachura sapling and some rose plants.

5 When Tara came back to the garden she found one of her young rose plants
a. cut to pieces.
b. damaged and not straight.
c. very stiff and straight.

Read the last two paragraphs of the story and answer the following questions.
1 Why did Sara's mother ask her to say sorry to her sister, Tara?
2 How did the young rose bush get crumpled and damaged?
3 How did Tara react when Sara said sorry to her?
4 What did Mr Ahmed say to Tara about forgiveness?
5 Did Tara finally forgive her sister?

Now Read these sentences carefully.
1a You should say sorry to your sister.
1b You shouldn't run carelessly.
2a You should forgive your sister.
2b You shouldn't make her feel more guilty.
3a You've been coughing a lot recently. You should see the doctor.
3b You shouldn't smoke so much.
4a I think the Government should do something about this.
4b I think we shouldn't have frequent strikes.
or
4c I don't think we should have frequent strikes.
5a I think we should invite Imran to the party.
5b I think we shouldn't tell him it's my birthday.
or
5c I don't think we should tell him it's my birthday.

In sentences 1, 2 & 3 'should' and 'shouldn't' are used to advise somebody; and in sentences 4 & 5 they are used to give an opinion (মতামত).

Remember should is not as strong as must.

eg.
1 We should cut our nails. (week)
2 You must cut nails. (strong)
or
3 We shouldn't throw waste materials (আবরণা) around. (weak)
4 You mustn't throw waste materials around. (strong)
You are giving advice to a friend. Read the following situations and write sentences with **should**/**shouldn't**.

Example:
your friend is always coughing because he smokes too much. Advice him to stop smoking.
— You should stop smoking.
  or
  You shouldn't smoke.

1. Your friend has the habit of biting his nails. Advice him not to do so.
2. Your friend rides his bicycle at night without lights. You think this is dangerous. Advice him to fix the lights.
3. Your friend uses a safety pin to clean his teeth. You think this is dangerous. Advise him not to do so.
4. Your friend has a sore throat. Advise him to gargle with hot water.
5. Your friend has a backache, but she works in the kitchen for too long. Advise her not to work in the kitchen for so long.

This time give your opinion about something.
Use 'I think ......................... should/shouldn't ..................'.
  or
'I don't think ...................... should ...................................'.

Example:

a. Barek has just been offered a job. You think it would be a good idea for him to accept it.
   — I think Break should accept the job.

b. Habib wants to reach the airport at least two hours before the plane arrives. You don't think it is necessary for him to reach the airport that early.
   — I don't think you should go to the airport that early.

1. You think it would be a good idea for all motorists to wear seat belts.
2. You don't think it would be a good idea for Zareen to go out alone.
3. Zeeshan always catches cold. You think it is a good idea for him to keep his feet warm.
4. You think it is time for us to do something to improve the bus service in Bangladesh.
5. Many schools in Bangladesh run double shifts. You think it is not good to run double shifts without recruiting sufficient teachers.

Write ten sentences of your own using **should**/**shouldn't** — five to advise somebody, and five to give your opinion about something.
Sewing a New Dress

A

Look at the picture and answer these two questions orally.

1. What do you think the relationship is between the two characters?
2. What are they doing?

B

Read the story.

Sewing a New Dress

Amreen is a student in Class 6. She is a good student and does her studies regularly. She is good not only in her studies but also in other extra-curricular activities. She loves singing and gardening. But recently, she has developed a special interest in cutting and sewing.

One day she took a piece of cloth to her mother and said, "Mother, can you help me cut this piece of cloth? I want to make a dress for myself." Her mother, Mrs Alam, who was busy knitting, left her work. She said, "But Amreen, you're too young to sew your own dress. You'll simply spoil this piece of cloth." "No mother, I won't spoil it if you're with me," replied Amreen. Mrs. Alam thought it useless arguing with her daughter. So she said, "Leave your cloth here and get me the scissors." Amreen brought her the scissors and they both managed to cut out a dress with long sleeves. Then came the next request — "Mother, now show me how to sew it with machine." Her mother agreed.

She took her to the sewing machine in the bedroom, and said "Look, here's the key. You have to open the lid first. Then take a reel of thread and put it here on the stand. Pull it this way and bring it down here to check if there's enough thread in the bobbin. The thread usually comes from the bottom. Put your cloth here and turn the handle like this. Your machine will do the rest of the work."
Amreen observed the whole process keenly. Then she asked her mother, "But now, what can I do if the machine gets stuck, or if the handle doesn't move?" Her mother replied, "In that case, you have to put some oil on the machine. In fact, you have to check the machine before you start using it." This answer led to another question Amreen couldn't help asking. She said, "Mother, let me ask you one more question. How often do I have to oil the machine?" Her mother's reply was in fact a piece of advice. She said, "You have to oil and clean the machine regularly, at least once a month."

Read and Note.

extra-curricular activities: activities that a student does after school, other than regular study of class subjects, eg. sports, literary and cultural activities, sewing, knitting, etc.

cutting and sewing: cutting pieces of cloth and sewing new dresses.

knitting: knitting (making) a sweater or a jumper (with wool).

arguing: giving reasons for what one believes, in reply to somebody else's opinion expressed.

scissors: a cutting instrument with two blades.

long sleeves: parts of a dress that covers the arms.

bobbin: small roller or spool for thread in a machine.

Have to: this is used to express the idea of obligation. For third person singular, ie. he/she we say, 'has to', eg. She has to finish cooking by 12:30.

Read section B and then rearrange these jumbled sentences to show the different steps one must follow in order to use a sewing machine.

1. The machine will do the rest of the work.
2. Pull the thread and bring it down to the needle.
3. Use the key and open the lid of the machine.
4. Place your cloth and turn the handle round.
5. Thread the needle.
6. Check your machine before you start using it.
7. Take a reel of thread and put it here on the stand.

Answer these questions first orally and then in writing.

1. Describe Amreen as a student.
2. What was her mother doing when Amreen came up to her with a request?
3. Why did Mrs Alam think it useless arguing with her daughter?
4. What will Amreen do if the machine gets stuck?
5. How often should the machine be cleaned?
**Read the following sentences and see how have to is used to express obligation.**

1. Oh dear, it's already 2:00 I have to go now.
2. I can't meet you this weekend. I have to go to Chittagong.
3. Your case is quite serious, so you have to wait for the doctor.
4. Dela can't read the blackboard. She has to wear glasses.
5. Zeeshan has to sit an admission test next Monday.
6. These boys will have to pay a fine for staying away from class.
7. Yesterday he got up late as he didn't have to go to work.
8. You don't have to work till six everyday.
9. This morning I had to go to work early.
10. He had a serious back ache. He had to go to hospital.

**Note the following points.**

Use 'have to' with I, we, you and they.

Use 'has to' with she and he.

'Have to' can be used in all forms — past, present and future.

**Examples:**

Sentence 1 — present

Sentences 9, 10 — past

Sentence 6 — future.

**Now complete these sentences with have to/has to/had to.**

1. You really .................. work harder if you want to get admitted to that school.
2. Tomorrow I .................. go to the office very early.
3. Zareen .................. go for an interview to get a visa for Canada.
4. Most children in Bangladesh ................. wear uniform when they go to school.
5. I'm sorry, I couldn't come to your party yesterday. I ................. work late.
6. There is an outbreak of cholera in that village. People will ................. take care of the food they eat and the water they drink.
7. Our radio stopped working. We ................. take it to the mechanic.
8. Jamal is a naughty boy. He ................. change his behaviour.
9. During the liberation war people ................. walk for miles to go to a safe place.
10. All the boys will ................. stand here in a queue before they enter the class.

**Read the following questions/sentences carefully.**

1. Why do you have to take a rickshaw? Your school is just on the corner.
2. How long do you have to continue with this medicine?
3 Why did you have to wear a sari when you can't manage it?
4 Does she have to speak in English at the interview?
5 I don't have to go to Gazipur every day.
6 You don't have to wear formal dress for this party.
7 We didn't have to pay any extra money for the refreshments.

Note that we use do/does/did with have to in present and past questions and as in Sentences 1-4 above, and in negative sentences as in Sentences 5-7.

Now make questions with have to.

Example:
Mr. Khan had to go to the airport.
Why did he have to go to the airport?
1 I have to finish this book in two days.
   Why .................................................................?
2 Zayed has to leave for home tomorrow at 2 pm.
   What time exactly ............................................?
3 In our admission test we had to answer forty questions for each subject.
   How many questions .................................?
4 The traffic police fined him for driving without headlights.
   How much ............................................................?
5 You have to finish this chapter today.
   When ............................................................?

Make negative sentences with have to.

Example:
Do you buy calendars?
No, I don't have to buy calendars. I always get them as gifts.
1 Do you have to carry all these books to school everyday?
   No .............................................................?
2 Put some milk in my tea. You ......................... sugar.
3 Write your answer with a pencil. You ....................... a pen.
4 This door is always kept locked. They ..................
5 Did you go to the post office to collect your parcel?
   No .............................................................
6 Does she have to go to the music lesson everyday?
   No .............................................................

Using have to write ten sentences about yourself and five questions you would like to ask your friend.

Expressing Obligation/Compulsion
Revision and Test

A

Read the following situations and give advice to the people mentioned below. Write sentences with should/shouldn't.

Example:
Your brother is always riding his motorbike at a very high speed. Advise him to go more slowly.
— You should always keep to moderate speed when you ride your motorbike.

1 Shabuj sometimes eats with dirty hands. Advise him not to eat with dirty hands.
2 Maneez can't write well because he doesn't hold the pencil properly. Advise him to hold the pencil properly.
3 Your nephew is going to replace a fused bulb. Advise him to turn the switch off first.
4 Your sister goes to bed without brushing her teeth. Advise her not to do so.
5 Your friend is complaining of eye problems these days. Advise him not to watch TV for so long.

B

Read the following situations and give your opinion. Use 'I think . . . should/shouldn't' or 'I don't think . . . should'.

Example:
There are too many rickshaws in Dhaka. You think it a good idea to cut down the number of rickshaws and to provide for the rickshaw pullers.
—I think the municipal authority should cut down the number of rickshaws in Dhaka and provide for the rickshaw pullers.

1 You are facing a lot of water problems in your flat. You think it a good idea for the landlord to change the caretaker.
2 Your telephone bill is suddenly too high. You think it is not your bill and you should not pay it.
3 You are in a restaurant with a friend. The water served doesn't seem to be safe. You think it is not wise to drink this water.
4 Begging is something you can't approve of. You think the Government should do something about it.
5 In Bangladesh people are demanding safer roads. You think it is a good idea to make people — both pedestrians and drivers — aware of the rules of the road.

C Read the following words and make sentences with each of those using must/mustn't.
Example:
eat
— I must eat whenever I am hungry.
— I mustn't eat too much at a time.
1 cook:
2 sleep:
3 drive:
4 jump:
5 write:
6 walk:

D Complete these sentences with have to/has to/had to.
1 Well, if you are not feeling well you ................. stay at home.
2 If Moushumi wants to perform in CELP TV programmes for BOU then she ................. sit for an audition.
3 Last year when we went to visit my sister at the University we ................. take a local train from Chittagong to Hathazari.
4 The vase doesn't look good in that corner. It ................. to be placed here.
5 If you want to start a paragraph you ................. leave some space from the margin.

E Make questions with have to.
Example:
The railway guard checked the tickets and counted the number of heads.
— Why did he have to count the number of heads?
1 You must drive very slowly here.
— Why do they .....................................................?
2 They go to Gazipur everyday.
— When ............................................................?
3 This book has to be covered like this.
— Why ............................................................?
4 It's better if they walk to school.
SSC Programme

— Why .................................................................?
5 For your SSC examination, you must take a soft pencil to the examination hall.
— Why .................................................................?

Now make negative sentences with have to.

Example:
For Eid, I have to buy about twelve gifts.
— I don't have to buy so many gifts. I'll buy just a few.

1 Zeeshan always catches cold. He has to wear warm clothes all the time.
— Zareen .............................................................. .

2 Rehana can go to the fish market alone.
— Shujan .............................................................. .

3 Did you have to stay awake late before your final exams?
— No, ................................................................. .

4 On your way to London do you have to stop in Moscow?
— No ................................................................. .

5 I have to pay electricity, gas and water bills separately.
— I ................................................................. .
LESSON : 1

A
1. She is writing something.
2. He is holding his mother.
3. May be he wants something from his mother.

C
2(c) Most of his friends have their own bicycle.
3(d) Maneez hugged his mother and softly made a request.
4(e) He requested his mother to buy him a good bicycle.
5(a) She agreed to buy him a bicycle but on one condition.

D
1. Maneez doesn't have a bicycle of his own. Most of his friends have their own. When he wants to ride a bicycle he asks his friends. Sometimes they let him, and sometimes they don't. This gets him down sometimes.
2. Maneez hugged his mother from behind before asking her for a bicycle.
3. The condition that his mother made for Maneez to get a bicycle was that he should study hard and do better in his exams.
4. Maneez agreed to study hard and do well in his exams. But in return his mother must buy him the bicycle.

E
1. I must study regularly.
2. I must have breakfast by 8 o'clock.
3. You must get some exercise everyday.
4. We must wash clothes.
5. You must feed the poultry.
6. He must water the plants everyday.
7. She must clean the house whenever it's dirty.
8. We mustn't drink river water.
9. He mustn't eat sweets everyday.
10. We mustn't watch TV for so long.
11. She mustn't brush our teeth everyday.
12. We must drink a lot of safe water everyday.

F
— Maneez must study hard.
— His mother must buy him a bicycle.
Do your work and show it to your tutor.

LESSON : 2

Suggested answers :
1 The girl looking after her plants is the owner of the garden.
2 To make a beautiful garden we should first of all choose a good area and get the soil ready. We should take out the weeds, make flower beds and collect tender flowers of different varieties. Then we should plant them, water them regularly, and add manure when necessary.

Di
1 (a)  2 (b)  3 (c)  4 (c)  5 (b)

Dii
1 Sara's mother asked her to say sorry to her sister Tara because Sara had crumpled and damaged one of her sister's young rose bushes that she received as a gift from her father.
2 When Sara was running after a butterfly she accidentally stamped on a young rose bush. It fell down and lay crumpled and damaged.
3 When Sara said sorry, Tara was still in tears and she turned her face away as she was angry with her.
4 Mr Mansur Ahmed walked up to his daughter, Tara, patted her affectionately and advised her to forgive her sister Sara. He added that it was no use making her feel more guilty.
5 Yes, Tara finally forgave her sister, and that is evident from the smile she gave her.

F1
1 You shouldn't bite your nails.
2 You should fix your lights.
3 You shouldn't use a safety pin to clean your teeth.
4 You should gargle with hot water.
5 You shouldn't work in the kitchen for so long.

F2
1 I think all motorists should wear seat belts.
2 I don't think Zareen should go out alone.
3 I think Zeeshan should always keep his feet warm.
4 I think the Government should improve the bus service in Bangladesh.
5 I don't think it is a good idea to run schools in double shifts without recruiting sufficient teachers.

LESSON : 3

A
1 Mother and daughter.
2 The daughter is learning from her mother how to sew with a machine.
Check your machine before you start using it.
Use the key and open the lid of the machine.
Take a reel of thread and put it here on the stand.
Pull the thread and bring it down to the needle.
Thread the needle.
Place your cloth and turn the handle round.
The machine will do the rest of the work.

Amreen is a good student who does her work regularly. She is good in extra-curricular activities too. She enjoys singing and gardening, and now she is interested in cutting and sewing too.
Amreen's mother was busy knitting when Amreen came up to her with a request.
Mrs Alam thought it useless arguing with her daughter because she was perhaps a stubborn girl who wouldn't take no for an answer.
The machine should be oiled and cleaned regularly, at least once a month.

Why do you have to finish it in two days?
What time exactly does he have to start?
How many questions did you have to answer?
How much did he have to pay?
When do I have to finish this chapter?

No, I don't have to carry them to school everyday.
You don't have to put in any sugar.
You don't have to use a pen.
They don't have to open it at all.
No, I didn't have to go to the post office to collect my parcel. They brought it home.
No, she doesn't have to go to the music lesson everyday.

Write the sentences and show them to your tutor.

LESSON : 4

You shouldn't eat with dirty hands.
You should hold the pencil properly.
You should turn the switch off first and then replace the fused bulb.
You shouldn't go to bed without brushing your teeth.
You shouldn't watch TV for so long. It's bad for your eyes.

I think the landlord should change the caretaker.
I don't think I should pay this bill as it is not mine.
I think we shouldn't drink this water as it doesn't seem to be safe.
I think the Government should do something to stop begging.
About the safety on roads, I think we should make both pedestrians and drivers aware of the rules of the road.

You must cook enough for all the guests.
— You mustn't leave anything half cooked.
All grown-ups must sleep at least six hours everyday.
— We mustn't sleep till late in the morning.
You must drive slowly when you turn.
— You mustn't drive when you feel you are tired.
To make a record you must jump higher.
— You mustn't jump barefooted. You'll hurt your feet.
You must write with a dark, soft pencil on the computer sheet.
— You mustn't write with a pen.
They must walk on the pavement.
— The mustn't walk on the grass.

have to  has to  had to
has to  have to

Why do I have to drive very slowly?
When did your office move to Gazipur?
Why does it have to be covered like this?
Why do they have to walk to school?
Why do I have to take a soft pencil to the examination hall?

Zareen doesn't have to wear warm clothes all the time.
Shujan doesn't have to go to the fish market with Rehana.
No, I didn't have to stay awake late before my final exams.
No, I don't have to stop in Moscow on my way to London.
I don't have to pay all these bills separately. They are included in the house rent.
UNIT 7

The Sentence

LESSON 1

What is a Sentence

A

Belal is a good boy.
Where are you going?

The man who came here yesterday

The man who came here yesterday is my uncle.

C

1. Rahim is sleeping. (s)
2. He is going to. (x)
3. He is a good boy. ( )
4. Come here. ( )
5. Father his doctor is a. ( )
6. Are you a? ( )
7. I don't know him. ( )
8. Where is my pencil? ( )
9. He has got a. ( )
10. Boys good are they. ( )
11. When are you going home? ( )
12. I can't help you. ( )
Kinds of Sentences

A  নিচের Sentence  গুলি বেখুন।

Mr Anis Ahmed is a doctor.
Ms Rehana Ahmed is not a doctor.

এখানে প্রথম Sentence এ Mr Anis Ahmed সামর্কে কিছু বলা হয়েছে। দ্বিতীয় Sentence এ Ms Rehana Ahmed সামর্কে কিছু অধীকার করা হয়েছে। এ ধরনের Sentence কে বলা হয় Statement. Statement হতে পারে affirmative বা ই-বোধক অথবা negative বা না-বোধক। Statement এর শেষে full stop (.) বসে।

B  নিচের Sentence  গুলি বেখুন।

Where are you going?
Can't you help me?

এসব Sentence এ প্রশ্ন করা হয়েছে। এ ধরনের Sentence কে বলা হয় Question। Question – affirmative ও negative দুই রকমই হয়। Question এর শেষে question mark (?) বসে।

C  নিচের Sentence  গুলি বেখুন।

Be quiet!
Please be seated.
Don't open the door.

D  এসব Sentence এ আদেশ বা অনুরোধ করা হয়েছে। এ ধরনের Sentence কে বলা হয় Imperatives. Imperative Sentenceও affirmative ও negative দুই প্রকারই হতে পারে। Imperatives এর বিশেষত এই যে সাধারণত এই ধরনের sentence এ subject (you) উহা বা understood থাকে। এদের শেষে সাধারণত full stop বসে। তবে কোনো কোনো ক্ষেত্রে exclamation mark (!) বসতে পারে।

Imperatives কে অনেকে command বা request হবে থাকেন।

নিচের Sentence  গুলির মধ্যে statements এর পাশে S, Questions এর পাশে Q এবং Imperatives এর পাশে I লিখুন। করোকটি করে দেওয়া হয়েছে।

1 Where do you live? (Q)
2 I live here. (S)
3 Come here. (I)
4 Where are you going? ( )
5 I'm going to market. ( )
6 Please wait for me. ( )
7 Have you seen him? ( )
8 I haven't seen him. ( )
9 Let me go. ( )
10 There's a book on the table. ( )
11 It's raining. ( )
12 Don't go out now. ( )
13 You'll catch cold. ( )
**Subject and Predicate**

A  

*He left.*  
*The old man was very unhappy.*  
*The boys and girls were dancing happily.*  
*(You) Let me go.*  
*(You) Don't wait for me.*

The sentence গুলিতে বাকা হরফে লেখা অংশগুলো হচ্ছে subject। এ থেকে আপনার বুঝাতে পারছেন যে যার সম্পর্কে কিছু বলা হয় তাকে বলা হয় subject এবং subject সম্পর্কে যা কিছু বলা হয় তাকে বলা হয় predicate।

**Imperative Sentence**

এ সাধারণত subject (You) উল্লেখ করে।

B  

Questions এর ক্ষেত্রে subject সাধারণত sentence এর প্রথ্মে থাকে না। যেমন :  
*Where are you going?*  
এখানে subject হচ্ছে you এবং predicate হচ্ছে sentence এর বাকী অংশ। Questions এর ক্ষেত্রে Question word এবং/অথবা auxiliary verb তাপে চলে আসায় এমন হয়।

কয়েকটি Questions এর নমুনা দেখুন।

1. Have you seen the film?
2. How can I get there?
3. Who came here?
4. What happened?

উপরের sentence গুলিতে subject গুলো বাকা হরফে দেওয়া হয়েছে। খেলাল করে দেখুন যে 1 ও 2 নং sentence এ subject প্রথমে আসেনি। কিন্তু 3 ও 4 নং sentence এ Question words 'who' এবং 'what' sentence দুটির subject হওয়ার প্রথমে এসেছে।

C  

নিচের sentence গুলির subject এর নিচে দাঁড় দিন। কয়েকটি করে দেওয়া হয়েছে।

1. Man is mortal.
2. How do you feel?
3. When will his mother come?
4. She will come tomorrow.
5. He wrote me a letter.
6. Who broke this glass?
7. Bangladesh is our mother land.
8. Can you do this sum?
9. Rich people are not always happy.
10. A young lady came to see you.
11. I don't know her.
12. She is my friend.
### Answer Key

#### Lesson 1

<p>| | | | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>(s)</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>(s)</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>(x)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
<td>(s)</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>(x)</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>(x)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
<td>(s)</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>(s)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Lesson 2

<p>| | | | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>(Q)</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>(S)</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>(I)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>(I)</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>(S)</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>(S)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
<td>(I)</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>(S)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Lesson 3

<p>| | | | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>his mother</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>She</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>He</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Who</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>Bangladesh</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>you</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>Rich people</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>A young lady</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>She</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Notes**
UNIT 8

Words

LESSON 1

Content Words

The boys and girls are playing in the field.

A Content words

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nouns</th>
<th>Kamal, Bangladesh, cow, honesty</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Verbs (Auxiliary verbs)</td>
<td>Come, go, walk, swim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adjectives</td>
<td>Happy, bad, wonderful, tall</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adverbs</td>
<td>fast, soon, quickly</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

B Content words

Noun : man, men, man's, men's
Verb : go, goes, going, went, gone
Adjective : happy, happier, happiest
Adverb : fast, faster, fastest

C

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sentence</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Jahid is a healthy boy.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Mr Ali and Kamal are going to the Eidgah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. The train is leaving the platform.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Look at the picture.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. The lion is the king of animals.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. The students cleaned the campus.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. The plants were growing well.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. Shahana has made a cardigan.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. Mrs Amin told her class a story.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. Aesop is famous for his stories.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11. Soon the caretaker brought some mangoes.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Lesson 2**

**Structure Words**

1. Lesson 1, the boys and girls are playing in the field. The boys, girls, playing, field are content words. The sentence "The boys and girls are playing in the field." contains content words.

B. In Bengali, structure words are different. Here, বাবাহারের ব্যাখ্যাতে সংখ্যা চুক্ত বেশি নয়, কিন্তু আরও বাবাহার। ইংরেজিতে বাবাহারের নিক থেকে হিসেবে স্থান বাবাহারিক হওয়া হয়। অপর পৃষ্ঠায় কিছু structure words are used for additional information.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Prepositions</th>
<th>to, of, in, on, into, at, over, etc.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Conjunctions</td>
<td>and, but, or, because etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Interjections</td>
<td>ah, oh, alas, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Determiners</td>
<td>the, a, an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>this, that, these, those</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>my, our, your, his, her, its, their</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>one, two, three, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>all, few, some, several, many, any, every, each, both, either, neither, no, much etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>more, most, little, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Question words</td>
<td>who, what, which, where, when etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Auxiliary verbs</td>
<td>am, is, are, was, were, will, shall, have, has, had, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Intensifiers</td>
<td>very, too, awfully, quite, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Personal Pronouns</td>
<td>I, we, you, he, she, it, they</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relative Pronouns</td>
<td>who, which, what, that, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introductory</td>
<td>'There' and 'It'.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
C  

English One

Sentences and structure words are often learned independently, but it is important to understand how they work together. Personal pronouns (I, you, he, she, it, we, they) are used to refer to a person or thing that is mentioned in the sentence. Content words (nouns, verbs, adjectives, adverbs) provide the main information of the sentence. The structure words (articles, prepositions, conjunctions) connect the sentence parts and give it its meaning.

D  

The following sentences and structure words are for your reference.

1. This is Jahid.
2. You are healthy and happy.
3. I do not like milk and vegetables.
4. The man was very afraid.
5. He worked hard and earned money.
6. It is time to go home now.
7. There are many books on the table.
8. Which do you want?
9. Most people in this country work on land.
10. A farmer's work is very important.
11. They grow paddy and wheat.
12. Many people are sickly and unhappy.

E  

The traditional grammar is based on a system of parts of speech. These include: Nouns, Pronouns, Verbs, Adjectives, Adverbs, Prepositions, Conjunctions, and Interjections. Each part of speech is defined by its function in the sentence. For example, nouns refer to people, places, or things, while verbs express action or state of being. Understanding these parts of speech is essential for effective communication.

Words
# ANSWER KEY

**Lesson 1**

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>C</strong></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Mr Ali, Kamal, going, Eidgah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>train, leaving, platform</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Look, picture</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>lion, king, animals</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>students, cleaned, campus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>plants, growing, well</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
<td>Shahana, made, cardigan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>Mrs Amin, told, class, story</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>Aesop, famous, stories</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
<td>Soon, caretaker, brought, mangoes</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Lesson 2**

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>D</strong></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>I, do, not, and</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>The, was, very</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>He, and</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>It, is, to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>There, are, many, on, the</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
<td>Which, do, you</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>Most, in, this, on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>A, is, very</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
<td>They, and</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
<td>Many, are, and</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
UNIT 9

Nouns

LESSON 1

Kinds of Nouns

A
Hasan is a boy.
Gold is a precious metal.
Health is wealth.

B
Hasan is a good boy.
Dhaka is the capital of Bangladesh.
The Padma is a big river.

C
The Himalayas, Everest, The Ittefaq, Sunday, January, The Tajmahal, Islam, Christianity, The Bible, The Holy Quran. Proper Nouns form a group such as police, public, committee, Government, cattle, jury, people, army, navy, etc.

D
He is in class ten.
Our team won the game. Theirs is a happy family.
The crowd was cheering the leader.
Milk is good for health.
Wood floats on water.
Rice is our staple food.

Honesty is the best policy.
Laughter is good for health.
Always speak the truth.

We are in class ten. (CL)
Never tell a lie. (A)
Would you like to have a cup of tea? (C)
I live in Mymensingh. (P)
The cattle are grazing in the field.
Solomon was a wise king.
The Padma, the Jamuna and the Meghna are our main rivers.
Childhood is the happiest part of life.
The grocer sells rice, sugar, oil and spices.
He joined the army, but his brother joined the navy.
The elephant is a large animal.
On Friday Rehana went to see her aunt.
Countable and Uncountable Nouns

A. The girl bought two pencils, an exercise-book, a ruler and two ball-pens.

B. The lady bought ten kgs of rice, one kg of sugar, two litres of oil and two pineapples.

C. Proper noun: a cow is an animal.
   Common noun: a chair is made of wood.
   Collective noun: May I have a glass of water?
   Material noun: He bought a shirt, a bag and an umbrella.
   Abstract noun: Wood floats on water, but iron does not.
   A cat has a tail.
   The window is made of glass.
   Do you take sugar in tea?
   He came here an hour ago.
   An orange grows on a tree.
   Please give me milk instead of tea.
A Numbers

countable nouns

A boy, a cat, a dog, a fox

vowel

an ant, an egg,
an ink-pot, an orange, an umbrella

letter 'h'

a boy, a cat, a dog, a fox

letter 'v'

an ant, an egg, an ink-pot, an orange, an umbrella

sentence

A table has four legs.

He is a university graduate.

I would like to have an apple.

He is an honourable man.

She bought an orange coloured sari.

Cats loves milk.

The girl bought an ice-cream.

He is European, but his wife is Australian.

I have been waiting here for an hour and a half.

He has bought a water-proof and an umbrella.

B Singular number

C Plural number
নামগুলোর সংখ্যাগত পরিবর্তন

তুলে শব্দটি যদি 'p', 't', 'k' ছাড়া অন্য consonant ধরনের বা কোনো vowel ধরনের শেষ হয় তবে s এর উচ্চারণ সাধারণ z এর মতো হয়।

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>একক</th>
<th>বহুক্ত</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>dog</td>
<td>dogs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>boy</td>
<td>boys</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>girl</td>
<td>girls</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cow</td>
<td>cows</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pen</td>
<td>pens</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tree</td>
<td>trees</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bird</td>
<td>birds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>picture</td>
<td>pictures</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

উপরের সব শব্দে s এর উচ্চারণ z এর মতো।

যে সব শব্দের শেষে f বা 'f' আছে সেগুলি plural হলে f বা 'f' পরিবর্তিত হয়ে ves হয়।

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>একক</th>
<th>বহুক্ত</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>thief</td>
<td>thieves</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>leaf</td>
<td>leaves</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>life</td>
<td>lives</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

যে সব শব্দের শেষে চ'র 'j', 's', 'sh', 'z' বা 'x' ধরনের আছে সেগুলির সাথে সাধারণ plural এর জনা es যোগ দেওয়া হয় যার উচ্চারণ হয় iz এর মতো।

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>একক</th>
<th>বহুক্ত</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>chief</td>
<td>chiefs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>roof</td>
<td>roofs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>proof</td>
<td>proofs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>belief</td>
<td>beliefs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>safe</td>
<td>safes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gulf</td>
<td>guls</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

উপরের সব plural শব্দে es এর উচ্চারণ iz এর মতো।

যে সব শব্দের শেষে o আছে তাদের সাথে সাধারণ es যোগ দেওয়া হয়, যার উচ্চারণ হয় z এর মতো।

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>একক</th>
<th>বহুক্ত</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>hero</td>
<td>heroes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>potato</td>
<td>potatoes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mango</td>
<td>mangoes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buffalo</td>
<td>buffaloes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>volcano</td>
<td>volcanoes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>echo</td>
<td>echoes</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
I যে সব শব্দের শেষে y আছে সেগুলি plural হলে y এর পরিবর্তে ies ব্যবহৃত হয়, যার উচ্চারণ হয় z এর মতো। যেমন,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sing.</th>
<th>Pl.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>baby</td>
<td>babies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>city</td>
<td>cities</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>army</td>
<td>armies</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

J নিচের শব্দগুলির plural লিখুন এবং plural এর জন্য যৌগ দেওয়া অংশ প্রথমে উচ্চারণ করুন এবং পরে লিখুন। কয়েকটি করে দেওয়া হয়েছে।

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
<th>Ùcháraŋ</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 cap</td>
<td>caps</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 cab</td>
<td>cabs</td>
<td>z</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 rose</td>
<td>roses</td>
<td>iz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 leaf</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>vz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 bus</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 queen</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 bird</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 wolf</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 lady</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 roof</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11 calf</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12 story</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 potato</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14 army</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15 hero</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

K কেনা কেনা শব্দের শেষে plural কারার জন্য en বা ren যৌগ দেওয়া হয়। যেমন,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sing.</th>
<th>Pl.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ox.</td>
<td>oxen</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

L কেনা কেনা শব্দের ক্ষেত্রে plural কারার জন্য কিছু যৌগ দিতে হয় না, কিছু শব্দের মধ্যে হিসেবে (vowel) পরিবর্তিত হয়। যেমন,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sing.</th>
<th>Pl.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>man</td>
<td>men</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>foot</td>
<td>feet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>goose</td>
<td>geese</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

M কেনা কেনা শব্দের ক্ষেত্রে singular এবং plural এ একই শব্দ ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন,

one sheep — many sheep
one deer — five deer

Dozen, hundred, thousand, million ইংরেজিতে সংখ্যাবাচক শব্দের পূর্বে সংখ্যা বসলে plural এ পরিবর্তিত হয় না। যেমন, Five dozen, eight hundred, ten thousand, twenty million ইংরেজিতে এ সব শব্দের শেষে s যৌগ করলে তার অর্থ হয় আরেক। যেমন, I saw there hundreds of people. (আমি সেখানে হাজার হাজার লোক দেখেছিলাম।)
mathematics, physics, politics, news, innings, economics, mechanics.
Mathematics is a difficult subject.
Here is the news.
We won by an innings and ten runs.

Where are the scissors?
My trousers are blue.

Compound words के plural करते हले एर प्रधान शब्दिकें plural करते हया।

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>passer-by</td>
<td>passers-by</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>son-in-law</td>
<td>sons-in-law</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>maid-servant</td>
<td>maid-servants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>step-son</td>
<td>step-sons</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Plural करना। कयोकट करे देओया हयोदे।
1. A child is playing in the field.
   Children are playing in the fields.
2. She is a woman.
   They are women.
3. A bus is coming.
4. A potato is a vegetable.
5. We have a deer and a sheep.
6. A passer-by came to help her.
7. He caught a thief.
8. A lady is waiting for you.
9. The boy has lost a tooth.
10. This is my box.

Nouns

story, boxes, mathematics, sheep, women, oxen, maid-servant, geese, mango, knives, gulf, babies, wives, army, picture, queens, roses, brush, echo, news.
Lesson 4

Possessive

A

นิ้วเล็บ sentence ฮุ่น ฮุ่น
This is Jamal's book.
The girl's dress is beautiful.

Possessive sentences
Jamal's book.
The girl's dress is beautiful.

The girl's dress is beautiful.

Plural noun or possessive - 's
Belal's bag, Rana's shirt

Compound Nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound Nouns</th>
<th>Plural</th>
<th>Possessive</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>son-in-law</td>
<td>sons-in-law</td>
<td>son-in-law's</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>passer-by</td>
<td>passers-by</td>
<td>passer-by's</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

B

The roof of the house. (The house's roof น้า)
The legs of the table. (The table's legs น้า)

C

A day's journey, a week's holiday, the hundred years' war ฮัตติ่าย

E

Possessive ฮุ่น ฮุ่น
television, newspaper, dictionary

A boys' school ฮุ่น ฮุ่น
Children's park ฮุ่น ฮุ่น
Abedin's painting ฮุ่น ฮุ่น
Lesson 5

The Use of Articles

A

I have a raincoat and an umbrella.
The raincoat is new but the umbrella is old.

The girl sitting next to you is my sister.
The film I saw yesterday was interesting.

B

'The' के बला हय definite article, कारण एर द्वारा निर्दिष्ट करे कौनो वाल्कि वा बस्तोके बोजानो हय। येमन.
The girl sitting next to you is my sister.
The film I saw yesterday was interesting.

C

The tea you gave me was cold.
The water of this lake is saline.

D

Definite article 'the' आरो अनेकात्मक बबाहरु हय। येमन.
The cow is a useful animal.
The cat is a domestic animal.

Nouns
The Padma, the Ganges
The Indian Ocean
The Bay of Bengal
The Himalayas
The Maldives

The Holy Quran,
The Bible
The Vedas

English is the language of the English.

The sun, the moon, the earth, the sky, the east, the west, the north, the south

The tallest tree, the most beautiful girl, the first girl, the tenth chapter

The rich are not always happy.
We must all help the poor.

A cow gives milk. (= Every cow)
An elephant is a large animal. (= Every elephant)

The man who came to see you is _ an _ honest man.

Honesty is _ the _ best policy.

I met him _ _ _ year ago.

Dhaka is _ _ _ capital of Bangladesh.

Himalayas is to _ _ _ north of India.

I saw _ _ _ one-eyed may

Dog is _ _ _ faithful animal.

Earth goes round _ _ _ sun.

January is _ _ _ first month of _ _ _ year.

English is _ _ _ difficult language.
ANSWER KEY

Lesson 1

G  5  cattle (CL) field (C)
    6  Solomon (P) king (C)
    7  The Padma (P), the Jamuna (P), the Meghna (P) rivers (C)
    8  Childhood (A), part (C), life (C)
    9  grocer (C), rice (M), sugar (M), oil (M), spices (C)
   10  army (CL), brother (C), navy (CL)
   11  elephant (C), animal (C)
   12  Friday (P), Rehana (P), aunt (C)

Lesson 2

D  3  a, x
    4  a, a, an
    5  x, x, x
    6  A, a
    7  a, x, a
    8  A, x
    9  x, x
   10  an
   11  An, a
   12  x, x

Lesson 3

B  4  an
    5  an
    6  A
    7  an
    8  a, an
    9  an, a
   10  a, an

J  5  buses - iz
    6  queens - z
    7  birds - z
    8  wolves - vz,
    9  ladies - z,
   10  roofs - s
   11  calves - vz
   12  stories - z,
   13  potatoes - z
   14  armies - z
   15  heroes - z

Q  3  Buses are coming.
    4  Potatoes are vegetables.
    5  We have deer and sheep.
    6  Passers-by came to help her.
    7  He caught thieves.
    8  Ladies are waiting for you.
    9  Boys have lost teeth.
   10  These are my boxes.

R  Sing. - Pl. Sing. - Pl.
### SSC Programme

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>story</td>
<td>stories</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>box</td>
<td>boxes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mathematics</td>
<td>mathematics</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sheep</td>
<td>sheep</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>woman</td>
<td>women</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ox</td>
<td>oxen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>maid-servant</td>
<td>maid-servants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>goose</td>
<td>geese</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mango</td>
<td>mangoes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>knife</td>
<td>knives</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gulf</td>
<td>gulfs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>baby</td>
<td>babies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wife</td>
<td>wives</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>army</td>
<td>armies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>queen</td>
<td>queens</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rose</td>
<td>roses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>brush</td>
<td>brushes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>echo</td>
<td>echoes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>news</td>
<td>News</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Lesson 4

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>3</th>
<th>A week's holiday</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>The children's mother</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>The girls' school</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>My son-in-law's name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>A day's journey</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>Charles's house</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>My friend's daughter</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>Tagore's songs</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Lesson 5

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>3</th>
<th>a</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>the</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>The, the</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>The/A, a</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>The, the</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>the, the</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>x, a</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
UNIT 10

Pronouns

LESSON 1

Personal Pronouns

A

1. Rina is a student. She is in class ten.
2. Rahim's father is a doctor. He works in a hospital.

B

First person — I, me
Second person — You, you
Third person — He, she, it

C

Personal Pronouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>Object</th>
<th>Possessive Determiner</th>
<th>Possessive Pronoun</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Person</td>
<td>Sing.</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>me</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl.</td>
<td>We</td>
<td>us</td>
<td>our</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Person</td>
<td>Sing. and Pl.</td>
<td>You</td>
<td>You</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Person</td>
<td>Sing.</td>
<td>He</td>
<td>him</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>She</td>
<td>her</td>
<td>her</td>
<td>hers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>It</td>
<td>its</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl.</td>
<td>They</td>
<td>them</td>
<td>their</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Different Forms of Personal Pronouns
SSC Programme

বোঝার জন্য, sentence এ noun - subject এ object position এ অপরিবর্তিত থাকে। যেমন,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rahim</th>
<th>Karim</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Subject</td>
<td>Object</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Subject বা object যে position এ যে noun এ কোন না কেন তার কোনো পরিবর্তন হয় না। কিছু pronoun এর ফোরা এ কথা থাকে না। Subject position এ pronoun এর যে রূপ থাকে অপরিবর্তিত হয়। যেমন,

I saw Rahim. (subject)
Rahim saw me. (object)
He called a doctor. (subject)
The teacher called him. (object)

উপরের তালিকার ৩নং ও ৪নং কলাম দেখুন। দেখুন যে অধিকাংশ personal pronoun এর দুটি possessive রূপ আছে। ৩নং কলামের রান্নাটিকে possessive determiner বলা হয়েছে। Determiner বলতে রেখায় সেই শব্দকে যা noun এর পূর্বে বসে। যেহেতু এই position এ সাধারণত adjective বসে তাই কেউ কেউ একে possessive adjective বলেন। তবে আধুনিক গ্রামের একে possessive determiner বলা হয়। এর কয়েকটি নমুনা দেখুন:

My book is lost.
Our school is closed.
Where is your house?
His shirt is blue.
I like her dress.

লক্ষ করুন যে উপরের প্রতোক possessive determiner এর পরে noun যাচ্ছে।

৪নং কলামে যে possessive pronoun দেখানো হয়েছে তার পরে noun বসে না, বরং তারা noun এর হলো বসে। যেমন,

This book is mine.
Ours is an agricultural country.
This bag is his and that one is hers.
Their's is a big house.

উল্লেখ যে it এর পরিবর্তে possessive pronoun হয় না, যদিও possessive determiner হয়। আমরা বলতে পারি – This is its tail। কিংবা আমরা বলতে পারি না – * This tail is its.

Possessive determiner 'its' লিখতে apostrophe (') বা উর্ধ্বক্ষ ব্যবহার করতে না।
The man showed him a picture. (he)
My brother came to see me. (I), (I)
Where is _ _ _ going? (he)
don't know where _ _ _ is going. (I), (he)
_sister is a friend of _ _ _. (he), (I)
give _ _ _ a ring? (you), (I)
That big house is _ _ _. (they)
is much smaller. (we)
dog has lost _ _ _ tail. (we), (it)
teacher is very strict. (you)
dress is white but _ _ _ is red. (she), (you)
pen is better that _ _ _. (I), (you)

LESSON 2

Reflexive Pronouns

The boy hurt himself.
I can look after myself.
Can you do the job by yourself?
We did the job ourselves.

Uporer pronoun ollir nicher dagi deowa hayechi tadoler sadhe self ba selves rong deowa ache. E dhoner reflexive pronoun ke bola hoi reflexive pronouns.

Reflexive pronouns er poro talarik nicher deowan. Eoller muchho kere felonu.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>First Person</td>
<td>myself</td>
<td>ourselves</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Second Person</td>
<td>yourself</td>
<td>yourselves</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Third Person</td>
<td>himself</td>
<td>herself</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>itself</td>
<td>theirselves</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Reflexive Pronouns


Reflexive pronoun kiberabe babori hoi ta deowan.

1. Yadi subject ed object akei banchi hoi ta reflexive pronoun babori hoi. Esem:
   I blamed myself.
The girl washed herself.
He looked at himself in the mirror.
SSC Programme

1. Emphasis & reflexive pronoun
   She herself cleaned the room.
   We repaired the engine ourselves.
   They themselves are responsible for the accident.

2. Reflexive pronoun by
   The box is too heavy for him to lift by himself.
   I prefer working by myself.
   Young children should not swim by themselves.

C reflexive pronoun
   1. He was angry at himself.
   2. You yourself made the mistake.
   3. She is sitting by herself. Let's go and talk to her.
   4. We absented _ _ _ _ from the class.
   5. Mr Rahman _ _ _ _ came to see me.
   6. Mina has a bad habit of talking to _ _ _ _ .
   7. Did you enjoy _ _ _ _ in the picnic?
   8. Can you do the job by _ _ _ _ or shall I help you?
   9. She burnt _ _ _ _ while cooking.
   10. The poor girl lives by _ _ _ _ .
   11. I was angry at _ _ _ _ .
   12. She _ _ _ _ found her lost key.

LESSON 3

Relative Pronouns

A

The man lives next door.
He is very friendly.

B Relative pronoun

The lady who was here yesterday has now left for Chittagong.
He is the boy that stole my watch.

Yesterday I ate some fish which made me sick.

My car that broke down yesterday has now been repaired.

The woman whom I saw yesterday is a doctor.

The book which you gave me is interesting.

I can't believe what you are saying.

You are saying something. I can't believe it.
relative pronoun  টি কোনা। যে সব তুলে relative বাদ দেওয়া সত্তব যেখানে x চিহ্ন দিন, কোনো relative বসানো না। কয়েকটি করে দেওয়া হয়েছে।

1 He is the man who (that) broke my calculator.
2 Don't believe what he says.
3 The cake __ she baked was very tasty.
4 The girl __ works in your office is my sister.
5 I don't agree with __ you have just said.
6 The roses __ bloom in my garden are very beautiful.
7 The roses __ I sent you are from my garden.
8 The teacher liked the essay __ I wrote.
9 Tell me __ you want and I'll give it to you.
10 The cow __ you bought yesterday gives five litres of milk a day.
11 I know __ you don't know.
12 The doctor __ she visited is very famous.

**ANSWER KEY**

*Lesson 1*

**G**

3 he 4 I, he 5 His, mine
6 you, me 7 theirs 8 Ours
9 Our, its 10 Your 11 Her, yours
12 My, yours

*Lesson 2*

**C**

4 ourselves 5 himself 6 herself
7 yourself অথবা yourselves 8 yourself
9 herself 10 herself 11 myself
12 herself

*Lesson 3*

**F**

4 who (that) 5 what 6 which/that
7 x 8 x 9 what
10 x 11 what 12 x

( ) = ব্যবহার করা যায় তবে না করাই বাংলীয়
/ = যে কোনো একটি ব্যবহার করা যায়
Transitive and Intransitive Verbs

A

निचের sentence গুলি দেখুন:

1. Rana is eating rice.
2. Belal is running.
3. Renu is a girl.

B

উপরের sentence গুলির যে সব word এর নিচে দাগ দেওয়া আছে সেগুলির দ্বারা কেনা কিছু করা বা হওয়া রোপণ। এ ধরনের শব্দকে বলে verb। ইংরেজি sentence এ verb একটি গুরুত্বপূর্ণ শব্দ। Verb ছাড়া কোনো ইংরেজি sentence হয় না। যদি একটি মাত্র word এ একটি sentence হয়া তবে সেই word টি হবে একটি verb। যেমন, Stop, Come, Go ইত্যাদি। অবশ্য এই সব sentence এ subject (you) উহা আছে।

C

রাজির made a kite.
The mother loves her child.
I saw him.

এসব sentence সম্পর্কে এ ধরনের প্রশ্ন করা যায়:

What did Rashid make? উভয় হবে – A kite.
Who (কাকে) does the mother love? – Her Child.
Who did I see? – Him.

যে সব verb সম্পর্কে what (কি) বা who (কাকে) দিয়ে প্রশ্ন করা যায় তাদের বলে Transitive verb। Made, loves, saw এই verb গুলি transitive verbs। What (কি) এবং who (কাকে) এর উভয়ের মাধ্যমে যে শব্দ পাওয়া যায় তা হচ্ছে ঐ verb এর object।

এখানে made এর object হচ্ছে a kite, loves এর object - her child এবং saw এর object - him।

পাশের ২নং sentence টি দেখুন। বেলাল is running। এই sentence এর সম্পর্কে what (কি) এবং who (কাকে) দিয়ে প্রশ্ন করা সত্ত্ব নয়। এ ধরনের verb কে বলে Intransitive verbs। আরও কিছু নমুনা দেখুন:

He is sleeping.
Helal jumped over the fence.
They are going home.

যে verb গুলির নিচে দাগ দেওয়া হয়েছে সেগুলি intransitive verbs.
SSC Programme

1. Rabi is walking. (I)
2. Hasan caught a thief. (T)
3. Can you swim? ( )
4. Please open the door. ( )
5. He read this book. ( )
6. I know him. ( )
7. I will go home next month. ( )
8. We live here. ( )
9. Never tell a lie. ( )
10. Stand up on the bench. ( )
11. She is singing sweetly. ( )
12. I wrote a letter. ( )

I gave him a book.
He told us a story.
I asked him a question.

What did I give him? (what)
Who did I give the book to? (who)

I showed a picture. (direct)
I offered you a cup of tea. (direct)
I wrote a nice letter. (indirect)
She told me a secret. (indirect)
My brother lent me some money. (indirect)
The teacher asked Rabiul a difficult question. (indirect)
**Transitive**

| He rang the bell.       | The bell rang.       |
| I stopped the car.      | The car stopped.     |
| Babla is flying a kite. | Birds fly.           |
| Sima broke the glass.   | The glass broke.     |
| I feel a pain in my stomach. | How do you feel?     |

**Intransitive**

| The phone is ringing.   | ( )                  |
| Stop ringing the bell.  | ( )                  |
| Why have you stopped?   | ( )                  |
| He stopped me.          | ( )                  |
| Fire burns everythings. | ( )                  |
| He burnt his hand.      | ( )                  |
| She dropped a plate from her hand. | ( )            |
| The fruit dropped from the tree. | ( )              |

**LESSON 2**

### Special Verbs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>am, is, are has, have do, does</td>
<td>was, were had did</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>shall</td>
<td>should</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>will</td>
<td>would</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>can</td>
<td>could</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>may</td>
<td>might</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>must</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>need</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ought(to)</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dare</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>used(to)</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Auxiliary verbs**

*The** verb কে বিভিন্ন grammarians বিভিন্ন নামে ডাকেন। কেউ কেউ এদের বলন auxiliary verbs অথবা সহায়কী �verb। তার কারণ এরা অন্য verb এর সাথে ব্যবহৃত হয়। যে verb এর সাথে ব্যবহৃত হয় তাকে বলা হয় principal বা প্রধান verb।

*Auxiliary verb* ব্যবহৃত হয় principal verb এর অর্থ সম্পূর্ণ করতে। যেমন,

I am (auxiliary) going (principal) home.
He will (auxiliary) come (principal) soon.
You ought to (auxiliary) help (principal) me.
SSC Programme

B  এদের মধ্যে ৩নং ও ৪নং কলামে দেওয়া ১৩টি verb কে কেউ কেউ modal auxiliary বা সংক্ষেপে modals বলেন। কারণ এই verb গুলি বস্তুর নানা ধরনের mood বা মনোভাব প্রকাশ করতে সাহায্য করে। যেমন,  
May I come in? (অনুমতি প্রার্থনা)  
You must go. (আবশ্যক প্রদান)  
You need not go. (অনয়নহীনতা)  
We ought to love our country (উচিততাবোধ)  
Could you help me? (অনুরোধ)

C  তবে এই ২৪টি verb কে special verbs বলাই সমীচীন। কারণ এই verb গুলির কিছু বিশেষত আছে যা অন্য কোনো verb এর নেই। লক্ষ করন, কেবলমাত্র এই ২৪টি verb এর সাথে not (সংক্ষেপে n't) যোগ করা যায়, অন্য কোনো verb এর সাথে নয়। যেমন,  
I am well. I am not well.  
He will go. He will not (won't) go.  
It might rain. It might not rain.  
এই ২৪টি verb বাতীত অন্য কোনো verb কে negative করতে হলে verb এর সাথে do যোগ দিয়ে তার সাথে not যোগ দিতে হয়। যেমন,  
I like mangoes. I don't like mangoes.  
They went home. They did not go home.  
He goes to school regularly. He does not go to school regularly.  
কোনো principal verb এর সাথে একাধিক special verb থাকলে negative করার সময় not যোগ দিতে হবে। প্রথম special verbটির ঠিক পরে। যেমন,  
I may have seen him. (Affirmative)  
I may not have seen him. (Negative)

D  নিচের sentence গুলিকে negative করন।  
1 She has helped me.  
2 He is an intelligent man.  
3 They lived here.  
4 Harun has heard the story.  
5 You ought to go.  

E  একইভাবে কোনো প্রশ্ন করার সময় এই ২৪টি special verb চলে আসে subject এর পূর্বে। Special verb না থাকলে do ব্যবহার করে প্রশ্ন করতে হয়। যেমন,  
He will go. Will he go?  
They are happy. Are they happy?  
He must come. Must he come?  
He sings well. Does he sing well?  
They ate breakfast. Did they eat breakfast?

F  নিচের statements গুলিকে question এ পরিণত করন। একটি করে দেওয়া হয়েছে।  
1 I am late.  
Q: Am I late?  
2 She was safe.  
3 My friends left early.  
4 The children are playing.  
5 He should go now.  
6 Rajib came to see me.
Tag questions are a type of question that asks for confirmation of a statement. They are formed by adding a tag at the end of the statement. There are two basic types of tag questions:

1. **Tag question** and special verb: When the statement ends in a special verb such as 'Don't', the tag is 'Do'.
   - Example: You can't help me, can you?

2. **Sentence** and tag question: When the statement contains a question word, the tag is 'Yes/No'.
   - Example: Has he come? Yes, he has.

English One

He is well, isn't he?  
You can't help me, can you?  
They lived here, didn't they?  
She makes many mistakes, doesn't she?

1. You have finished, haven't you?  
2. He did not eat much, did he?  
3. You can't swim.  
4. She wants a job.  
5. We must start now.  
6. You won't leave me.

Tag questions are useful for getting information in a more polite way than yes/no questions. They can also be used to ask for confirmation of a statement. English One

He is well, isn't he?  
You can't help me, can you?  
They lived here, didn't they?  
She makes many mistakes, doesn't she?

1. You have finished, haven't you?  
2. He did not eat much, did he?  
3. You can't swim.  
4. She wants a job.  
5. We must start now.  
6. You won't leave me.

Tag questions are a type of question that asks for confirmation of a statement. They are formed by adding a tag at the end of the statement. There are two basic types of tag questions:

1. **Tag question** and special verb: When the statement ends in a special verb such as 'Don't', the tag is 'Do'.
   - Example: You can't help me, can you?

2. **Sentence** and tag question: When the statement contains a question word, the tag is 'Yes/No'.
   - Example: Has he come? Yes, he has.

Tag questions are useful for getting information in a more polite way than yes/no questions. They can also be used to ask for confirmation of a statement. English One

He is well, isn't he?  
You can't help me, can you?  
They lived here, didn't they?  
She makes many mistakes, doesn't she?

1. You have finished, haven't you?  
2. He did not eat much, did he?  
3. You can't swim.  
4. She wants a job.  
5. We must start now.  
6. You won't leave me.
LESSON 3

Forms of Verbs

A সাধারণত ইংরেজি verb এর ৫টি forms বা রূপ থাকে। নিচে এগুলির নমুনা দেখুন।

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>v</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>v d/v en</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>go</td>
<td>goes</td>
<td>going</td>
<td>went</td>
<td>gone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>write</td>
<td>writes</td>
<td>writing</td>
<td>wrote</td>
<td>written</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>walk</td>
<td>walks</td>
<td>walking</td>
<td>walked</td>
<td>walked</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

B এখন verb এর এই বিভিন্ন forms এর নাম কি এবং কখন ব্যবহার হয় তা দেখু যাক।

1 নং রূপটিকে বলা হয় verb এর stem। এটি ব্যবহার হয়:

1 'To' এর পরে। যেমন,
I want to go. To see is to believe.

2 Simple present tense এ (3rd person singular number এর পরে ব্যাখ্যা)
যেমন,
I go. We go. You go. They go.

3 Imperative sentence এ যেমন,
Go away. Stand up. Please come here.

4 will, would, shall, should, can, could, may, might, must, ought to, used to ইংরেজি auxiliary verb এর পরে। যেমন,
I will go. He could sing. Shall I open the door? ইংরেজি।

C ২ নং রূপ অথবা v-s রূপটি কেবলমাত্র এক জায়গায় ব্যবহার হয়। সেটি হচ্ছে simple present tense এ subject যদি 3rd person singular number, অথবা he, she, it (অথবা একজন বাচ্চি বা একটি প্রাণী বা বছর) হয় তবে verb এর s বা es যোগ দিতে হয়।
এটিকে v-s রূপ বা 3rd singular রূপ বলা হয়। যেমন,
Karim sings.
Sima dances.
It walks.
Continuous tense  
be verb (am, is, are, was, were)  

Rahim went home. (P)

He will be coming here soon. ( )

To err is human. ( )

Have you seen him? ( )

He likes to sing. ( )

Don't run in the sun. ( )

Verbs
### Regular and Irregular Verbs

**LESSON 4**

Regular and Irregular Verbs

Regular verbs consist of a stem, which remains unchanged in the past tense, and the past participle, which is formed by adding 

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Past Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>add</td>
<td>added</td>
<td>added</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>call</td>
<td>called</td>
<td>called</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cross</td>
<td>crossed</td>
<td>crossed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>end</td>
<td>ended</td>
<td>ended</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>enter</td>
<td>entered</td>
<td>entered</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hang</td>
<td>hanged</td>
<td>hanged</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>help</td>
<td>helped</td>
<td>helped</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lift</td>
<td>lifted</td>
<td>lifted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>look</td>
<td>looked</td>
<td>looked</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>play</td>
<td>played</td>
<td>played</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>talk</td>
<td>talked</td>
<td>talked</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>walk</td>
<td>walked</td>
<td>walked</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wish</td>
<td>wished</td>
<td>wished</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Irregular verbs change form in both the past tense and past participle.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Past Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>arise</td>
<td>arose</td>
<td>arised</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>awake</td>
<td>awoke</td>
<td>awoken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>be (am, is, are)?</td>
<td>was, were</td>
<td>been</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bear</td>
<td>bore</td>
<td>borne, born</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>beat</td>
<td>beat</td>
<td>beaten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>befall</td>
<td>befell</td>
<td>befallen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>beget</td>
<td>begot</td>
<td>begotten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>begin</td>
<td>began</td>
<td>begun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>behold</td>
<td>beheld</td>
<td>beheld</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bend</td>
<td>bent</td>
<td>bent, bended</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bet</td>
<td>bet, betted</td>
<td>bet, betted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bind</td>
<td>bound</td>
<td>bound</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bite</td>
<td>bit</td>
<td>bitten, bit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bleed</td>
<td>bled</td>
<td>bled</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bless</td>
<td>blessed, blest</td>
<td>blessed, blest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>blow</td>
<td>blew</td>
<td>blown</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>break</td>
<td>broke</td>
<td>broken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>breed</td>
<td>bred</td>
<td>bred</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bring</td>
<td>brought</td>
<td>brought</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>build</td>
<td>built</td>
<td>built</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stem</td>
<td>Past</td>
<td>Past Participle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>burn (পুড়ে ফেলা)</td>
<td>burnt, burned</td>
<td>burnt, burned</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>burst (ফেন্ট পড়া)</td>
<td>burst</td>
<td>burst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buy (কিন্ন করা)</td>
<td>bought</td>
<td>bought</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cast (নিল্পে করা)</td>
<td>cast</td>
<td>cast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>catch (ঘরায়)</td>
<td>caught</td>
<td>caught</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>choose (পছন্দ করা)</td>
<td>chose</td>
<td>chosen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cling (আকড়ে ঘরা)</td>
<td>clung</td>
<td>clung</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cost (ঠাকুর ঝাঁকেনে)</td>
<td>cost</td>
<td>cost</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>creep (বুকের টেপে চলা)</td>
<td>creep</td>
<td>creep</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cut (কাঁটা)</td>
<td>cut</td>
<td>cut</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dig (খণ্ড করা)</td>
<td>dug</td>
<td>dug</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>do (করা)</td>
<td>did</td>
<td>done</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>draw (চাঁদা, আচায়া)</td>
<td>drew</td>
<td>drawn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dream (প্রাণ দেখা)</td>
<td>dreamed/dreamt</td>
<td>dreamed/dreamt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>drink (পান করা)</td>
<td>drank</td>
<td>drunk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>drive (চলানে)</td>
<td>drove</td>
<td>driven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dwell (বাস করা)</td>
<td>dwelt</td>
<td>dwelt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eat (খাওয়া)</td>
<td>ate</td>
<td>eaten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fall (পড়ত হওয়া)</td>
<td>fell</td>
<td>fallen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>feed (খাওয়ানো)</td>
<td>fed</td>
<td>fed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>feel (অনুভব করা)</td>
<td>felt</td>
<td>felt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fight (যুদ্ধ করা)</td>
<td>fought</td>
<td>fought</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>find (পাওয়া, পেখা)</td>
<td>found</td>
<td>found</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>flee (পাড়ানে)</td>
<td>fled</td>
<td>fled</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fling (নিকরে করা)</td>
<td>flung</td>
<td>flung</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fly (উড়া)</td>
<td>flew</td>
<td>flown</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>forget (হুলে যাওয়া)</td>
<td>forgot</td>
<td>forgotten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>forgive (ক্ষমা করা)</td>
<td>forgave</td>
<td>forgiven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>forsake (ত্যাগ করা)</td>
<td>forsook</td>
<td>forsaken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>freeze (ঠাঁকায় জমাট বাঁধা)</td>
<td>froze</td>
<td>frozen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>get (পাওয়া)</td>
<td>got</td>
<td>got</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>give (দেওয়া)</td>
<td>gave</td>
<td>given</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>go (যাওয়া)</td>
<td>went</td>
<td>gone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>grind (চুরু করা)</td>
<td>ground</td>
<td>ground</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>grow (জন্মনো)</td>
<td>grew</td>
<td>grown</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hang (ঝাড়ানে)</td>
<td>hung</td>
<td>hung</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>have, has (আছে)</td>
<td>had</td>
<td>had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hear (শোনা)</td>
<td>heard</td>
<td>heard</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hide (লুকানো)</td>
<td>hid</td>
<td>hidden, hid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hit (আঘাত করা)</td>
<td>hit</td>
<td>hit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hold (ঘরা)</td>
<td>held</td>
<td>held</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hurt (আঘাত করা)</td>
<td>hurt</td>
<td>hurt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>keep (রাখা)</td>
<td>kept</td>
<td>kept</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kneel (হাতের ভেনা)</td>
<td>knelt</td>
<td>knelt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>know (জানা)</td>
<td>knew</td>
<td>known</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lay (রাখা)</td>
<td>laid</td>
<td>laid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lead (চালিত করা)</td>
<td>led</td>
<td>led</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>leave (ঠাপ করা)</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>left</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lend (দাখা দেওয়া)</td>
<td>lent</td>
<td>lent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let (অনুভিত লেওয়া)</td>
<td>let</td>
<td>let</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lie (পায়া)</td>
<td>lay</td>
<td>lain</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lose (হারানো)</td>
<td>lost</td>
<td>lost</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## SSC Programme

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Past Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>make (বানানা)</td>
<td>made</td>
<td>made</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mean (বোনানা)</td>
<td>meant</td>
<td>meant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mistake (লুল করা)</td>
<td>mistook</td>
<td>mistaken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pay (প্রদান করা)</td>
<td>paid</td>
<td>paid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>put (রাখা)</td>
<td>put</td>
<td>put</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quit (তাপ করা)</td>
<td>quit</td>
<td>quit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>read (পড়া)</td>
<td>read (পড়ে)</td>
<td>read (পড়ে)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ride (চড়া)</td>
<td>rode</td>
<td>ridden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ring (ঘুঁটা বাজানো)</td>
<td>rang</td>
<td>rung</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rise (উঠা)</td>
<td>rose</td>
<td>risen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>run (লোড়ানো)</td>
<td>ran</td>
<td>run</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>say (বলা)</td>
<td>said</td>
<td>said</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>see (দেখা)</td>
<td>saw</td>
<td>seen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>seek (পেঁজা)</td>
<td>sought</td>
<td>sought</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sell (বিক্রি করা)</td>
<td>sold</td>
<td>sold</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>send (পাঠানো)</td>
<td>sent</td>
<td>sent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>set (স্থাপন করা)</td>
<td>set</td>
<td>set</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>shake (আকাশ)</td>
<td>shook</td>
<td>shaken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>shine (আলো দেওয়া)</td>
<td>shone</td>
<td>shone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>shoot (হবিল করা)</td>
<td>shot</td>
<td>shot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>show (দেখানো)</td>
<td>showed</td>
<td>shown (showed)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>shut (কর্ণ করা)</td>
<td>shut</td>
<td>shut</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sing (গান করা)</td>
<td>sang</td>
<td>sung</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sink (ডুব যাওয়া)</td>
<td>sank</td>
<td>sunk (sunken)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sit (বসা)</td>
<td>sat</td>
<td>sat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sleep (হুমানো)</td>
<td>slept</td>
<td>slept</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>speak (কথা বলা)</td>
<td>spoke</td>
<td>spoke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spend (পরচ করা)</td>
<td>spent</td>
<td>spent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stand (স্থান করা)</td>
<td>stood</td>
<td>stood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>steal (চুরি করা)</td>
<td>stole</td>
<td>stolen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sting (ঘুল ফোটানো)</td>
<td>stung</td>
<td>stung</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>strike (আঘাত করা)</td>
<td>struck</td>
<td>struck</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>swear (শপথ করা)</td>
<td>swore</td>
<td>sworn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sweep (ঢাঁড় দেওয়া)</td>
<td>swept</td>
<td>swept</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>swim (সাতার দেওয়া)</td>
<td>swam</td>
<td>swum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>swing (দোল খাওয়া)</td>
<td>swung</td>
<td>swung</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>take (লওয়া)</td>
<td>took</td>
<td>taken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>teach (শিক্ষা দেওয়া)</td>
<td>taught</td>
<td>taught</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tear (ছিটে ফেলা)</td>
<td>tore</td>
<td>torn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tell (বলা)</td>
<td>told</td>
<td>told</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>think (চিন্তা করা)</td>
<td>thought</td>
<td>thought</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>throw (নিকেপ করা)</td>
<td>threw</td>
<td>thrown</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>understand (মুক্তে পারা)</td>
<td>understood</td>
<td>understood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>undertake (গুহণ করা)</td>
<td>undertook</td>
<td>undertook</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>undo (বাতল করা)</td>
<td>undid</td>
<td>undone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wake (মম থেকে জাগা)</td>
<td>woke</td>
<td>woken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wear (পরিধান করা)</td>
<td>wore</td>
<td>worn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>weave (তোতে রোনা)</td>
<td>wove</td>
<td>woven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>weep (ফ্যান্ড করা)</td>
<td>wept</td>
<td>wept</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>win (জয়লাভ করা)</td>
<td>won</td>
<td>won</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>write (লেখা)</td>
<td>wrote</td>
<td>written</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Tenses

1. I like mangoes.
2. I liked mangoes.

A sentence এ বর্তমান সময়ের কথা বলা হয়েছে। একে বলা হয় Present Tense। ২র্থ sentence এ অতীত সময়ের কথা বলা হয়েছে। একে বলা হয় Past Tense। Tense বলতে আমরা বুঝি কোন কথার সংবিধান হয়েছে সেই সময়কে। অতীত বোঝান জন্য verb এর past form অথবা v-d form ব্যবহার করে হয়। কিন্তু ইংরেজিতে ভিন্ন ভিন্ন জন্য verb এর কোনো বিশেষ রূপ নেই। এজন্য সাধারণত verb এর পূর্ব will (কোনো কোনো সময় shall) ব্যবহার করে future tense করা হয়। তাই, তাই,

They will come tomorrow.
I will go home next week.

Bjl¡ h¢T L¡S¢V LMe pwO¢Va q¬u¬Rz ¢L¿º Cw¬l¢S¬a i¢hoÉv

Shall I open the window?
Shall we go out now?

এই ধরনের questions এর প্রকৃত অর্থ suggestion বা প্রস্তাব দেওয়া। অবশ্যই future tense এর ধারণা অন্যভাবেও দেওয়া যায়। তাই, তাই,

They come tomorrow.
He is going to buy this house ইত্যাদি।

B ইংরেজি প্রাপ্ত tense তিনটি — Past, Present এবং Future। নিচে 'walk' verb ব্যবহার করে এই প্রাপ্ত tenses এর বিভিন্ন রূপ দেখা নেন হল।

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PRESENT TENSE</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Person</td>
<td>I walk</td>
<td>We walk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Person</td>
<td>You walk</td>
<td>You walk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Person</td>
<td>He walks</td>
<td>They walk</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PAST TENSE</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Person</td>
<td>I walked</td>
<td>We walked</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Person</td>
<td>You walked</td>
<td>You walked</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Person</td>
<td>He walked</td>
<td>They walked</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
# FUTURE TENSE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I will walk</td>
<td>We will walk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| 2nd Person  | You will walk | You will walk |

| 3rd Person  | He/She/It will walk | They will walk |

---

The table shows the future tense forms for 1st, 2nd, and 3rd persons in both singular and plural. The future tense is used to express actions that will happen in the future.

---

### Present Tense

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Future</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>He gets up early every morning.</td>
<td>He ate the mango.</td>
<td>He will go to college next year.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I ate the mango.</td>
<td>I told me a story.</td>
<td>I know him.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>We started early.</td>
<td>They saw the film.</td>
<td>He leaves for Chittagong tomorrow.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>They did not like it.</td>
<td>They did not like it.</td>
<td>Our school opens next week.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

The present tense is used to describe actions that happen regularly or are currently true.

---

### Future Tense

The future tense is used to express actions that will happen in the future.

---

### Simple Present Tense

This tense is used to describe actions that happen regularly or are currently true.

---

### Present Simple Tense

This tense is used to describe actions that happen regularly or are currently true.

---

### Past Tense

The past tense is used to describe actions that have already happened.

---

### Past Tense

The past tense is used to describe actions that have already happened.

---

### Continuous Tense

The continuous tense is used to describe actions that are happening over a period of time.

---

### Perfect Tense

The perfect tense is used to describe actions that have been completed.

---

### Present Perfect Tense

The present perfect tense is used to describe actions that have been completed.

---

### Simple Future Tense

The simple future tense is used to describe actions that will happen in the future.

---

### Continuous Future Tense

The continuous future tense is used to describe actions that will be happening in the future.

---

### Perfect Future Tense

The perfect future tense is used to describe actions that will have been completed in the future.

---

### Present Continuous Tense

The present continuous tense is used to describe actions that are happening at the moment.

---

### Present Perfect Continuous Tense

The present perfect continuous tense is used to describe actions that have been happening over a period of time.

---

### Past Continuous Tense

The past continuous tense is used to describe actions that were happening at a particular time.

---

### Past Perfect Continuous Tense

The past perfect continuous tense is used to describe actions that were happening at a particular time.

---

### Future Continuous Tense

The future continuous tense is used to describe actions that will be happening at a particular time.

---

### Future Perfect Continuous Tense

The future perfect continuous tense is used to describe actions that will have been happening at a particular time.

---

### Simple Future Continuous Tense

The simple future continuous tense is used to describe actions that will be happening at a particular time.

---

### Continuous Future Perfect Tense

The continuous future perfect tense is used to describe actions that will have been happening at a particular time.

---

### Present Continuous Future Tense

The present continuous future tense is used to describe actions that will be happening at a particular time.

---

### Perfect Continuous Future Tense

The perfect continuous future tense is used to describe actions that will have been happening at a particular time.
Present Continuous Tense

The present tense form of the verb is **am/is/are**. The present participle form is **-ing**.

**Example:**

1. **I am eating breakfast.**
2. **He is taking a bath.**
3. **They are going to Khulna tomorrow.**
4. **What are you doing this evening?**

Present Perfect Tense

The present perfect tense is formed by using **has/have** and the past participle form of the verb.

**Example:**

1. **I have received his letter.**
2. **He has gone to Dhaka.**
3. **I have just returned.**
4. **The lights have gone out just now.**
5. **I have known him for a long time.**
6. **We have lived in Dhaka since 1985.**

Present Perfect Continuous Tense

The present perfect continuous tense is formed by using **has/has been** and the present participle form of the verb.

**Example:**

1. **She has been singing for an hour.**
2. **We have been waiting for a long time.**
3. **They have been working all day.**
4. **They have been studying since morning.**
1 Usually I go to school by bus. (go)
2 He is watching T.V. now. (watch)
3 He ______ coffee to tea. (prefer)
4 Don't go out now. It ______ (rain)
5 I ______ this book. (read)
6 They ______ for an hour. (wait)
7 Kamal ______ for London this afternoon (leave)
8 I ______ something burning. (smell)
9 Listen to her. She ______ (sing)
10 I ______ somebody calling me. (hear)

**Past Simple Tense**

.nb He walked to school.
.I got your letter yesterday.

এটি বাংলা হয়:

1 অতীতে কোনো ঘটনা ঘটে গেছে বোঝানোর জন্য। যেমন,
   I worked hard yesterday.
.অতীত সময়ের উল্লেখ থাকলে অবশ্যই past tense ব্যবহার করতে হবে। না থাকলে present
.ক্ষণীকরণ করা যায়। যেমন,
.এটি যাচাই করলে অতীত সময়ের উল্লেখ কোনো আছে না যে সময়ের ক্ষণীকরণ করা
.দরকার। যেমন,
.He has come here. (সময়ের উল্লেখ নাই)
.He came here yesterday. (অতীত সময়ের উল্লেখ আছে)

**Past Continuous Tense**

এই tense এর রূপ হচ্ছে was/were + v-ing যেমন,

It was raining.

এই tenseটি বাংলা হয় যখন:

1 অতীতে কোনো ঘটনা কিছুক্ষণ ধরে চলছিল। ঘটনাটি কখন চলছিল তা বোঝানোর জন্য
time এর উল্লেখ থাকতে পারে বা অন্য একটি ঘটনার উল্লেখ থাকতে পারে। যেমন,
.We were watching television when he arrived.
.ক্ষণীকরণ করা যায়।
.এটি যাচাই করলে অতীত সময়ের উল্লেখ কোনো আছে না যে সময়ের ক্ষণীকরণ করা
.দরকার। যেমন,
While I was doing homework my sister was watching TV.
While Rome was burning Nero was playing the fiddle.
Past Perfect Tense

This tense shows something that happened before another event. It uses the form **had + past participle**.

Examples:
1. **They had left.**
   - The train had left before I reached the station.
   - I arrived after she had left.
   - He told me that he had read the book.

Past Perfect Continuous Tense

This tense describes an action that was happening before another event. It uses the form **had been + v-ing**.

Examples:
1. **I had been playing.**
   - I had been studying this morning for my exam.
   - He had been working all day. That exhausted him by evening.
   - By the time we left Chittagong we had been living there for 15 years.

Sentence

- **I was sleeping** (sleep) when my friend **telephoned**. (telephone)
- **The patient had died** (die) before the doctor **arrived**.
- **We were** (be) tired as we **worked** (work) all day.
- **He went** (go) to the bus station 9:30 a.m., but the bus **left** (leave) at 9:15 a.m.
- **Last night** I **heard** (hear) a sound. Probably a burglar **tried** (try) to get in.
- **She cooked** (cook) when the telephone **rang**.
- **The sun shone** (shine) when I **went** (go) out, but by the time I **returned** (return) it **rained** (rain) heavily.

Future Simple Tense

This tense indicates an event that will happen in the future. It uses the form **will + base form**.

Examples:
1. **I will go.** You will go. He will go. **Shall I help you? Shall we go for a picnic?**

Verbs
Future Continuous Tense

He will be playing tennis this afternoon.

Future Perfect Tense

They will have reached London by this time tomorrow.

By next December I shall have finished writing my novel.

Future Perfect Continuous Tense

My father will have been completing 30 years of service by the time he retires next year.

Sentence

1. The earth goes round the sun. (go/goes going)
2. I saw him yesterday. (see/have seen/saw)
3. I will be forty next December. (am/will be/have been)
4. It started to rain while we _ _ _ _. (playing/are playing/were playing)
5. He thanked me for what I _ _ _ _. (have done/had done/have been doing)
6. The baby _ _ _ _ all morning. (cries/has been crying/cry)
7. He jumped off the bus while it _ _ _ _ (moved/was moving/is moving).
8. I _ _ _ _ _ _ a motor cycle last week. (bought/have bought/had bought)
9. I _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ here until next Sunday. (stay/will be staying/have stayed)
10. Don't disturb me. I _ _ _ _ _ _ my home work. (do/did/am doing)
11. Asma _ _ _ _ _ _ to be a doctor. (is wanting/wants/ want)
12 If you come at once I _ _ _ _ _ _ you something. (show, will show, am showing)

LESSON 6

Subject - Verb Agreement

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>Verb Agreement</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>He</td>
<td>goes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>She</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>It</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>They go</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Personal pronoun 1st, 2nd, and 3rd person  

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>First Person</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>we</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>am</td>
<td>are</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>have</td>
<td>have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>walk</td>
<td>walk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>go</td>
<td>go</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Second Person</td>
<td>you</td>
<td>you</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>are</td>
<td>are</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>have</td>
<td>have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>walk</td>
<td>walk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>go</td>
<td>go</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Third Person</td>
<td>he</td>
<td>they</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>she</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>it</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>is</td>
<td>are</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>has</td>
<td>have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>walks</td>
<td>walk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>goes</td>
<td>go</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The verb must agree with the subject.
SSC Programme

C যদি দুটি noun ব্যবহার করে একজন বক্তি বা একটি বস্তুকে বোঝায় তবে verb টি হবে singular। যেমন,
Bread and butter is good for you.
Slow and steady wins the race.
His secretary and stenographer is on leave.

D যদি either/or বা neither/nor দিয়ে noun বা pronoun কে যুক্ত করা হয় তবে verb টি agree করবে verb এর নিকটতম শব্দটির সাথে। যেমন,
Neither you nor your brother is at home.
Either he or I am responsible for the mistake.
Neither he nor his parents are in town.

E Noun এর পূর্বে each, every, are, either, neither থাকলে verb হবে singular।
যেমন,
Each of them gets a prize.
One of my friends lives here.
One of you has to go.
Either of the books is interesting.
Neither of them is trustworthy.
Everybody is absent.

F Each বা every ব্যবহার করে দুই বা ততোধিক subject থাকলেও verb হবে singular।
যেমন,
Each boy and each girl pays the same.
Every man, every woman, every boy and every girl has to work for his or her own country.

G কোনো subject এর সাথে as well as, with, along with, together with, in addition যোগ করে অন্য word বা phrase থাকলে verb টি agree করবে প্রথম subject এর সাথে। যেমন,
The parents along with their children are waiting outside.
The Prime Minister together with her ministers has just arrived.
English One

**plural noun** বহন করে দূর্বল, অর্থ, ওজন ইত্যাদি বোঝায় এবং সেটাকে যদি একটি **unit** হিসাবে বিচিত্র করা হয় তবে **verb** হবে **singular**। যেমন,
Fifty dollars is a lot of money.
A hundred kilometres is a long distance.
A hundred kg is a heavy weight to carry.

**The Arabian Nights** is a famous book.

**A lot of, a great deal of, some of, most of, plenty of,** এ ধরনের **phrase** যদি **uncountable noun** এর সাথে আসে তবে **verb** হবে **singular**। বিশ্ব যদি **countable noun** এর সাথে আসে **verb** হবে **plural**। যেমন,
A lot of water has been wasted.
A lot of dresses have been purchased.
There is plenty of rice for everybody.
There are plenty of books on this subject.
Most of the flour is spoil.
Most of the students are absent.

**Uncountable noun** এর মুখ্য গল্প করা যায় না এর কোনা **plural** হয় না। অতএব **uncountable noun** এর **verb** হবে **singular**। তবে একাধিক **uncountable noun** এর **verb** হবে **plural**। যেমন,
Gold is a heavy metal.
Butter and Ghee are both very expensive.

**sentence** গুলিতে রাকেট দেওয়া **verb** এর সঠিক রূপ বসন। একটি করে দেওয়া হয়েছে।
1. My mother and sister are here. (be)
2. Neither his parents nor his brother is alive. (be)
3. One of our teachers is retiring today. (be)
4. Twenty yards is a long distance to jump. (be)
5. Each of these books is thirty taka. (cost)
6. A lot of time has been wasted for nothing. (have)
7. The captain along with his teammates just entered the play ground. (have)
8. Rice and dal are good enough for us. (be)
9. Gulliver's Travels is written by Swift. (be)
10. Most of the students of this class are intelligent. (be)

Verbs
**The Infinitive**

A

6. The Infinitive

The Infinitive

A lesson এ আমরা দেখেছি যে verb কে subject এর সাথে agree করতে হয়। কিছু এটা সকল verb এর কেবল প্রশ্ন নয়। যে সব verb কে subject এর সাথে agree করে তাদের বলে finite verbs। যেমন, I am. He goes. You are there. He is here. I go. He goes. They go.

কিছু কিছু verb আছে যাদের বেলায় subject এর সহিত agree করার প্রশ্ন উঠে না। তাদের বলা হয় Non-finite verbs। যেমন, I want to go. He wants to go. They want to go. He saw me coming. I saw him coming. They saw us coming.

I like singing. He likes singing. You like singing.

উপরের sentence গুলিতে আমরা দেখছি যে verb যাই হোক না non-finite verb গুলি থাকে অপরিবর্তিত। Non-finite verb তিন প্রকার। যেমন, Infinitive, Participle এবং Gerund। এখন আমরা এদের বিষয়ে আলোচনা করব।

B

The Infinitive

নিচের sentence গুলি দেখুন।

1. To err is human.
2. She loves to dance.
3. He wants to help me.
4. To love our country is our duty.

লক্ষ করুন যে শব্দগুলির নিচে দাখ দেওয়া হয়েছে সেগুলি 'To' এর পরে এসেছে এবং verb এর stem রূপটি ব্যবহার হয়েছে অর্থাৎ verb এর সাথে কিছু বোঝ দেওয়া হয়নি। এ ধরনের verb কে বলা হয় Infinitive। উপরের sentence গুলিতে ব্যবহার infinitive গুলি verb হলেও এদের ব্যবহার করা হয়েছে noun এর মতো। যেমন ১ম sentence এ To err হচ্ছে sentence টির subject। ২ম sentence এ to dance হচ্ছে 'loves' verb এর object। সাধারণত noun কিংবা pronoun ই sentence এর subject কিংবা object হতে পারে। অথচ এখানে আমরা দেখছি infinitive হচ্ছে subject এবং object।

Infinitive এর ব্যবহার noun এর মতো হলেও এর ব্যবহার verb এর পূর্বাভাসে ব্যবহার হচ্ছে। যেমন ৩ম sentence এ to help হচ্ছে 'wants' verb এর object। কিছু to help এরও object আছে — me। ৪ম sentence এ To love our country হচ্ছে sentence টির subject, কিছু to love এর object হচ্ছে our country।
English One

C  সাধারণত To এর পরে infinitive বলে। তবে to ছাড়াও infinitive ব্যবহৃত হয়। তাকে 
বলে bare infinitive। Bare infinitive ব্যবহার হয়ঃ

১  Modal auxiliary (will, would, shall, should, can, could, may, might, 
must, need not ইত্যাদি) এর পরে। যেমন,

He will go.
It might happen.
You need not go.
You must help me.

২  Verb of perception এর পরে bare infinitive ব্যবহার হয়। যেমন,

I saw him leave the station.
You can hear him cry.
I could feel the ground shake.

৩  'Help' verb এর পরে infinitive 'to' সহ অথচ to ছাড়া উভয়ই হয়। যেমন,

He helped me complete the work.
He helped me to complete the work.

D আমরা দেখেছি infinitive হতে পারে sentence এর subject বা transitive verb এর 
object। infinitive অন্যতমে ব্যবহার হতে পারে। যেমন,

১  He came to see me. (purpose)
   এখানে adverb হিসাবে 'came' verb কে qualify করেছে।

২  The mangoes are sweet to eat.
   এখানে adverb হিসাবে 'sweet' adjective কে qualify করেছে।

৩  This is a house to let.
   এখানে adjective হিসাবে 'house' কে qualify করেছে।

৪  I asked him to go. (object complement)

৫  It's his habit to get up early. (subject complement)

E নিচের sentence গুলি দেখুন।

a  He went home.
b  He would see his grandmother.

এ দুটিকে Infinitive দিয়ে যোগ দিয়ে বলা যায়:

He went home to see his grandmother.

এই রকম আরও কিছু sentence দেখুন :

a) He did it.
b) I saw it.

এই দুটি sentence কে যোগ দিয়ে বলা যায়:

I saw him do it.

F এবার নিচের sentence গুলি infinitive ব্যবহার করে যুক্ত করুন।

1a I will help you.
b I want it.

2a He plays football.
b He likes it.

3a She gets up before down.
b It is her habit.

4a We heard the news.
b We were sorry.

5a We should obey our elders.
b It is our duty.
Participle

A

Participle হয় দুই প্রকার — Present participle ও Past participle. এই প্রকারে যে 'Be' vreb এর পরে verb এর present participle রূপ অর্থাৎ v-ing ব্যবহার করা হয় continuous tense এর জন্য। যেমন, He is singing. They were laughing.

'Have' verb এর পরে verb এর past participle রূপ ব্যবহার করা হয় perfect tense এর জন্য। যেমন, I have come. He has left. They had gone.

B

এ ছাড়াও Participle এর অন্যান্য ব্যবহার আছে। প্রথমে present participle নিয়ে আলোচনা করা যাক।

নিচের phrase ওলি দেখুন:
A rolling stone
A dancing girl
A sparkling stream
A singing bird

এখানে Verb এর present participle রূপ অর্থাৎ v-ing noun এর পূর্বে adjective এর মতো ব্যবহৃত হয়েছে। এদের বলে participial adjective। ইংরেজি ভাষায় এ ধরনের participial adjective এর ব্যবহার প্রচুর।

C

নিচের sentence ওলি দেখুন:
1 I saw the boy crossing the road.
2 Hearing the bell he opened the door.

উপরের sentence ওলির মো অংশে participial ব্যবহার হয়েছে তাকে বলে participial phrase। খোঁজ করে দেখুন participle phrase ওলির ব্যবহার adjective এর মতো। যেমন, crossing the road বর্ণনা করছে 'কর্মে। 'Hearing the bell' বর্ণনা করছে 'he' এর অবস্থা। অতএব এসব participial phrase কাজ করে adjective এর মতো।

D

নিচের sentence ওলির সঙ্গে ব্রাকেটে দেওয়া কথা যুক্ত করে পুনরায় লিখুন। Present participle ব্যবহার করুন। কয়েকটি করে দেওয়া হয়েছে।
1 I saw him. (He was going to school)
   I saw him going to school.
2 The man is Jasim. (He is coming this way)
   The man coming this way is Jasim.
3 I could hear him. (He was singing loudly)
4 Do you know the boy? (He is talking to Mamun.)
5 I returned home. (I was feeling very tired.)
6 He has a brother. (He is studying abroad.)
7 She sat in an armchair (She was reading a book.)
8 I wrote him a letter. (I requested him to help me.)
9 The thief got away. (He was running very fast.)
10 Look at the children. (They are playing in the field.)

এবার past participle অর্থাৎ v-d/v-en রূপে আলোচনা করা যাক। Present participle বর্ণনা করে verb এর চলমান রূপটিকে। কিন্তু past participle বর্ণনা করে verb এর completed রূপ। অর্থাৎ কাজ শেষ হয়ে যাওয়া অবস্থা। যেমন,
A wounded hero
A finished product
A learned man
A tired look

এরাই participale adjective রূপে ব্যবহার হয়েছে। তবে এরা কাজটি সম্পন্ন হয়ে যাওয়া অবস্থা বর্ণনা করে। ইংরেজি ভাষায় এদের ব্যবহারও প্রচুর।

কথা কর্তৃত্বে past participleও phrase এ ব্যবহার হতে পারে এবং adjective হিসাবে ব্যবহার হতে পারে। যেমন,
1 The building constructed a hundred years ago is still standing.
3 The man injured in the accident was taken to hospital.

উপরের sentence ওলিতে participial phrase গুলির কোনো noun কে qualify করেছে তা দেবে নে করুন।

নিচের sentence ওলির শূন্য স্থানে রাকেটে দেওয়া verb এর participle রূপ ব্যবহার করুন। Sentenceটি পড়ে টিক করেন present participle হবে না past participle হবে।

1 I was woken up by the baby crying. (cry)
2 Somebody named Mahfuz telephoned while you were out. (name)
3 A plane _ _ _ _ _ _ 105 passengers crashed yesterday. (carry)
4 He has a brother _ _ _ _ _ _ in the hospital. (work)
5 Some of the _ _ _ _ _ _ guests did not come. (invite)
6 Some ornaments _ _ _ _ _ _ to me have been stolen. (belong)
7 The man _ _ _ _ _ _ by the car has been taken to the hospital. (hit)
8 Lessons _ _ _ _ _ _ easily are soon forgotten. (learn)
9 _ _ _ _ _ _ a noise, I turned back. (hear)
10 A _ _ _ _ _ _ opportunity never returns. (lose)
**A**

The gerund

1. Walking is a good exercise.
2. She enjoys dancing.
3. I am tired of waiting.

**B**

The gerund is a verb in its present participle form. It functions as a noun or an adjective depending on its role in the sentence.

1. She is fond of singing. (gerund)
2. I could hear him singing loudly. (participle)
3. He has a brother studying abroad. (participle)

**C**

Use of Gerund

1. Sentence: A verb in the present participle form following the subject. Example: Smoking is bad for health.
2. Transitive verb: A verb in the present participle form following the object. Example: I like reading.
3. Preposition: A verb in the present participle form following the object. Example: He is afraid of swimming.
4. Complement: A verb in the present participle form following the subject. Example: What I dislike most is smoking.

**D**

1. Gambling is a bad habit. (G)
2. The man sitting on the bench is my brother. (P)
3. A rolling stone gathers no moss. ( )
4. I prefer dancing to singing. ( )
5. The miser hates spending money. ( )
6. I was happy to see them enjoying themselves. ( )
7. Everything depends on his coming. ( )
8. I like reading detective novels. ( )
9. Begin writing from the next page. ( )
10. We found his sleeping on the couch. ( )
Lesson 1

D 3 (I) 4 (T) The door
5 (T) This book 6 (T) him
7 (I) 8 (I)
9 (T) a lie 10 (I)
11 (I) 12 (T) a letter

F 2 you, a cup of tea
I, D
3 me, a nice letter
I, D
4 me, a secret
I, D
5 me, some money
I, D
6 Rabiul, a difficult question
I, D

H 1 (I) 2 (T) 3 (I) 4 (T) 5 (T) 6 (T) 7 (T) 8 (I)

Lesson 2

D 1 She has not helped me.
2 He is not an intelligent man.
3 They did not live here.
4 Harun has not heard the story.
5 You ought not to go.

F 2 Was she safe?
3 Did my friends leave early?
4 Are the children playing?
5 Should he go now?
6 Did Rajib come to see me?

H 3 can you? 4 doesn't she?
5 mustn't we? 6 will you?

J 3 must 4 didn't
5 won't 6 have

K 3 was 4 did
5 did 6 could

Lesson 3

G 4 (PP) 5 (P) 6 (Pr. P) 7 (S) 8 (PP) 9 (S) 10 (S)
### Lesson 5

<p>| | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>4 (Pt)</td>
<td>5 (P)</td>
<td>6 (Pt)</td>
<td>7 (P)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8 (F)</td>
<td>9 (Pt)</td>
<td>10 (Pt)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>3 prefers</td>
<td>4 is raining</td>
<td>5 have read</td>
<td>6 have waited/have been waiting</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7 leaves/is leaving</td>
<td>8 smell</td>
<td>9 is sining</td>
<td>10 hear</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N</td>
<td>3 were, had been working</td>
<td>4 went, had left</td>
<td>5 heard, was trying</td>
<td>6 was cooking, rang</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7 was shining, went, returned, was raining</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S</td>
<td>4 were playing</td>
<td>5 had done</td>
<td>6 has been crying</td>
<td>7 was moving</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8 bought</td>
<td>9 will be staying</td>
<td>10 am doing</td>
<td>11 wants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12 will show</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Lesson 6

<p>| | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>2 is</td>
<td>3 is</td>
<td>4 is</td>
<td>5 costs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6 has</td>
<td>7 has</td>
<td>8 is</td>
<td>9 is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10 are</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Lesson 7

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>1 I want to help you.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 He likes to play football.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 It is her habit to get up before dawn.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 We were sorry to hear the news.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 It is our duty to obey our elders.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Lesson 8

<p>| | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>3 I could hear him singing loudly.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 Do you know the boy talking to Mamun?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 I returned home feeling very tired. Or,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feeling very tired I returned home.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 He has a brother studying abroad.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 She sat in an arm chair reading a book.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 I wrote him a letter requesting him to help me.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 The thief got away running very fast. Or,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Running very fast the thief got away.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 Look at the children playing in the field.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G</td>
<td>3 carrying</td>
<td>4 working</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 invited</td>
<td>6 belonging</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 hit</td>
<td>8 learnt</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 hearing</td>
<td>10 lost</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Lesson 9

<p>| | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>3 (P)</td>
<td>4 (G)</td>
<td>5 (G)</td>
<td>6 (P)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7 (G)</td>
<td>8 (G)</td>
<td>9 (G)</td>
<td>10 (P)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
UNIT 12

Adjective

LESSON 1

What is an Adjective

A

He is a good boy.
She is intelligent.
I have two eyes.

B

Pick out the adjectives in the following sentences.

1. Kamal is a clever boy.
2. She has a new, green dress.
3. Dhaka is a large, busy city.
4. This mango is sweet.
5. He has bought a new bicycle.
6. There are not many students in the class today.
7. The day is fine.
8. There is not much rain in Australia.

C

Put suitable adjectives in the blanks

1. Bangladesh is a __________ country.
2. A cow has __________ legs.
3. The Padma is a __________ river.
4. He is an __________ man.
5. He has not __________ money.
6. Everest is a __________ mountain.
7. A dog is a __________ animal.
Kinds of Adjectives

A Adjectives of quality

He is an old man.
This is a new book.
That is a bad egg.
It is a fat cat.
She is a beautiful girl.

old, new, bad, fat, beautiful

B Match the adjectives of quality in List A with the nouns in List B.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A</th>
<th>B</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>fast</td>
<td>animal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>green</td>
<td>boy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>handsome</td>
<td>city</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hot</td>
<td>field</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>old</td>
<td>girl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pretty</td>
<td>knife</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sharp</td>
<td>river</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tall</td>
<td>train</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wide</td>
<td>tea</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wild</td>
<td>tree</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

C Put suitable adjectives in the blanks.

1. An elephant is a ___________ animal.
2. Mamun is a ___________ boy.
3. Mohsin was a ___________ man.
4. Dhaka is an ___________ city.
5. Akbar was a _______ Mughal emperor.
6. She is an ___________ girl.
7. I bought a red and ___________ pencil.
8. The horse is a ___________ animal.
9. A soldier is a ___________ man.
10. The Mahanagar Express is a ___________ train.

D Adjectives of quantity

Kamal has two books.
He has not many books.
He has few books.
Sharmin has five taka.
She has not much money.
She has little money.
Shahriyar has no money.
Hasan has some money.
Has Hasan any money?

 Urdu তার বাক্যগুলো লক্ষ করলে দেখা যাবে two, many, few, five, much, little, no, some, any ইত্যাদি শব্দগুলো নামবাদিক শব্দের (Noun word) পূর্বে বসে ঐ গুলোর সংখ্যা কিংবা পরিমাণ রেখাটে, অথবা কতগুলো (how many) বই বা কি পরিমাণ (how much) অথবা ইত্যাদি নিদর্শন করছে। এরপুর সংখ্যা বা পরিমাণ নির্দেশক শব্দকে ইংরেজি grammar এ adjective of quantity কিংবা quantitative adjective বলা হয়।

Many ও few শব্দ দুটি countable plural noun এর সংগে এবং much ও little শব্দ দুটি uncountable noun এর সংগে ব্যবহার হয়।

Some শব্দটি সাধারণত হ্যা বোঝাকে (affirmative sentence) এবং any শব্দটি না বোঝাকে (Negative) এবং প্রশ্নবোঝাকে (interrogative sentence) আমরা ব্যবহার করে থাকি।

Put an adjective of quantity in each of the following blanks.

1. I am very busy. I have ___ time to listen to you.
2. We must save ______money for the future.
3. He did not speak clearly and ______ people understood what he said.
4. A baby eats very _______ food.
5. There are _______ districts in Bangladesh.
6. Do you have _______ friends in England?
7. We must have _______ food everyday to keep healthy.
8. There is not _______ water in the jug.
9. ______ students are present in the class today.
10. There are ___ people than the seats in the hall.

Use many or much in these sentences.

1. I have not ______ money.
2. There is not ______ food in the house.
3. How ______ brothers or sisters do you have?
4. He does not know ______ English.
5. How ______ does this book cost?
6. There are ______ rivers in Bangladesh.
7. Are there ______ students absent today?
8. How ______ milk do you need?

Put some or any in the blanks.

1. There are not ______ books on the table.
2. There are _______ people in the field.
3. There are not ______ flowers in the garden.
4. Have you got ________ brothers at school?
5. I will buy ________ salt and sugar.
6. He does not have _______ sisters.
7. I need _______ money.
8. She bought ______ stamps from the post office.
Demonstrative adjectives

I like this pen.
I don't like that picture.
These books are new.
Those mangoes are green.

This and These are used to point out a definite reference to an already mentioned noun. They are singular for counting nouns and plural for uncountable nouns. That and Those are used with the plural of a counting noun.

Fill in the blanks with demonstrative adjectives.
1. I have bought _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ pen for sixty taka.
2. This pen is mine. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ pen is yours.
3. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ mangoes are sweet.
4. Have you read _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ book which I am reading?
5. These sticks are short. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ sticks are long.
6. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ books are new. Those are old.
7. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ boys on the back seat are talking to each other.
8. I know _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ man.

Interrogative adjectives

Which pen is yours?
What book are you reading now?
Whose pencil is this?

Fill in the blanks with interrogative adjectives.
1. _ _ _ _ _ class are you in?
2. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ pen is this?
3. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ time is it now?
4. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ price is this bicycle?
5. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ book is yours, this one or that one?
6. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ colour is the sky?
7. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ pen is yours?
8. _ _ _ _ _ _ day is today?
Possessive adjectives

This is my book.
That is your pen.
It is her pencil.

Put a possessive adjective in each of the following blanks.

1 They are working in _ _ _ _ garden.
2 I have broken _ _ _ _ _ pencil.
3 He will sell out _ _ _ _ bicycle.
4 We love _ _ _ _ _ country.
5 Ms Mahmuda is feeding _ _ _ _ baby.

Rewrite these sentences using possessive adjectives.

eg Q This book is mine.
A This is my book.

1 That pen is yours.
2 This pencil is hers.
3 Those books are theirs.
4 This umbrella is his.
5 Those toys are ours.

Distributive adjectives

Each girl will have a prize.
Every boy must do his homework.
You may take either book.
Neither restaurant is expensive.

Each শত্রু দুই বা তত্ত্বধিক এবং every শত্রু দুই তিন বা তত্ত্বধিক বাঁধি বা বক্তে ব্যবহার; either শত্রু দুই দুটোর মধ্যে যে কোনো একজন বাঁধি বা একটি বক্তে
SSC Programme

Each and every word of the median appears in the dictionary. Please write the letters of the word as shown.

She looks more beautiful each/every time I see her.

Put a **distributive adjective** in each of the following blanks.

1. You can take _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ book.
2. The Headmaster gave a book to _ _ _ _ student.
3. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ student must do it.
4. We want _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ child to be happy.
5. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ person in turn went to the doctor.
6. The doctor gave _ _ _ _ patient the same medicine.
7. These are trees on _ _ _ _ _ _ _ side of the road.
8. Come on Friday or Monday. _ _ _ _ day is OK.
9. Here are two sentences. Study _ _ _ _ _ _ _ one carefully.
10. _ _ _ _ _ _ _ pen is good. Give me another one.

**Position of Adjectives : attributive and predicative use**

Adjective of quantity and demonstrative, interrogative, possessive and distributive adjective serve the noun. 

Six people  
this book  
which boy  
my pencil  
each girl  
**Verb** and adjective of quality noun serve the noun.

a poor boy  
a rich man  
a lovely garden

The boy is clever.
She is intelligent.
The weather is bad.

Adjective noun serve the verb to attribute and serve the verb to predicative.
Adjectives: Degrees of Comparison

A Munir is a **tall** boy.

Mamun is **taller** than Munir.

Masud is the **tallest** boy of the three.

In **different degrees** we use the adjective **positive, comparative**, and **superlative degree**.

tall    taller    tallest

B Short adjectives

Each **short adjective** has **comparative** and **superlative**.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Positive</th>
<th>Comparative</th>
<th>Superlative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bright</td>
<td>brighter</td>
<td>brightest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bold</td>
<td>bolder</td>
<td>boldest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cheap</td>
<td>cheaper</td>
<td>cheapest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cold</td>
<td>colder</td>
<td>coldest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>great</td>
<td>greater</td>
<td>greatest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>high</td>
<td>higher</td>
<td>highest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>long</td>
<td>longer</td>
<td>longest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quick</td>
<td>quicker</td>
<td>quickest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>short</td>
<td>shorter</td>
<td>shortest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>strong</td>
<td>stronger</td>
<td>strongest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tall</td>
<td>taller</td>
<td>tallest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>young</td>
<td>younger</td>
<td>youngest</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Positive | Comparative | Superlative  
---|---|---  
brave | braver | bravest  
fine | finer | finest  
large | larger | largest  
late | later | latest  
nice | nicer | nicest  
wide | wider | widest  

### Positive | Comparative | Superlative  
---|---|---  
big | bigger | biggest  
fat | fatter | fattest  
hot | hotter | hottest  
thin | thinner | thinnest  

### Positive | Comparative | Superlative  
---|---|---  
clever | cleverer | cleverest  
low | lower | lowest  
new | newer | newest  

### Positive | Comparative | Superlative  
---|---|---  
busy | busier | busiest  
early | earlier | earliest  
happy | happier | happiest  
heavy | heavier | heaviest  
lazy | lazier | laziest  
lovely | lovelier | loveliest  
pretty | prettier | prettiest  
ugly | uglier | ugliest  

---

Unit 12 Page 168
### Longer Adjectives

Longer adjectives are formed by adding a syllable at the end to make the adjective longer. For example, "beautiful" becomes "more beautiful" and "most beautiful." Here is a list of adjectives and their comparative and superlative forms:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Positive</th>
<th>Comparative</th>
<th>Superlative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>beautiful</td>
<td>more beautiful</td>
<td>most beautiful</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>careful</td>
<td>more careful</td>
<td>most careful</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cheerful</td>
<td>more cheerful</td>
<td>most cheerful</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>comfortable</td>
<td>more comfortable</td>
<td>most comfortable</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dangerous</td>
<td>more dangerous</td>
<td>most dangerous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>difficult</td>
<td>more difficult</td>
<td>most difficult</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>expensive</td>
<td>more expensive</td>
<td>most expensive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>handsome</td>
<td>more handsome</td>
<td>most handsome</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>important</td>
<td>more important</td>
<td>most important</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>intelligent</td>
<td>more intelligent</td>
<td>most intelligent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>natural</td>
<td>more natural</td>
<td>most natural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>precious</td>
<td>more precious</td>
<td>most precious</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tragic</td>
<td>more tragic</td>
<td>most tragic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>useful</td>
<td>more useful</td>
<td>most useful</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>valuable</td>
<td>more valuable</td>
<td>most valuable</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Irregular Comparatives and Superlatives

Some adjectives form their comparative and superlative forms irregularly. For example, "bad" becomes worse and "worst." Here are some irregular adjectives and their comparative and superlative forms:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Positive</th>
<th>Comparative</th>
<th>Superlative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bad</td>
<td>worse</td>
<td>worst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>far</td>
<td>farther/further</td>
<td>farthest/furthest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>good</td>
<td>better</td>
<td>best</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>little</td>
<td>less</td>
<td>least</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>many/much</td>
<td>more</td>
<td>most</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>old</td>
<td>older/elder</td>
<td>oldest/eldest</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Structures with Comparisons**

**A Positive**: as + positive + as

The boy is as tall as his father.

Sharmin is as intelligent as Nahid.

This stick is as long as that one.

**Negative**: not so/ not as + adjective + as

The boy is not so tall as his father.

or

The boy is not as tall as his father.

**B Comparative**: comparative + than

The boy is taller than his father.

Sharmin is more intelligent than Nahid.

This stick is longer than that one.

**C Superlative**: the + superlative + in/of

Dhaka is the biggest city in Bangladesh.

Tapan is the tallest boy of the three.

Sharmin is the most beautiful girl in the class.

**D elder and eldest; older and oldest**

My elder/older brother lives in Canada.

His eldest/oldest daughter is a medical student.

elder/oldest আগ্রহীয় বিষয়ে বহুল দৃষ্টিকোণ হয়। যেমন, brother, sister, son, daughter, grandson, granddaughter ইত্যাদি। তবে একের বা older/oldest এর বাবারও সত্ত্বে।

My elder brother/sister বলতে আমরা ভাই কিংবা বোন আছে বলায়।

elder অধিক ভাই বা বোন থাকলে আমরা my eldest brother/sister বলে থাকি।
Fill in the blanks with suitable words.

1. I am ___ ___ old ___ him.
2. She is ___ ___ best girl ___ the class.
3. This pan is better ___ ___ that.
4. He is ___ ___ wisest man ___ ___ the village.
5. Laila is ___ ___ most clever girl ___ ___ the three.
6. He is ___ ___ strong ___ ___ a lion.
7. The weather is worse today ___ ___ yesterday.

Put the adjectives in brackets into their correct form.

1. Your pen is as (good) as mine.
2. Everest is the (high) mountain in the Himalayas.
3. The weather is (fine) than yesterday.
4. His hand is as (cold) as ice.
5. The elephant is the (big) of all land animals.
6. This bag is (heavy) than that one.
7. Iron is the (useful) metal.
8. Food is (important) than clothes.
9. I have (little) money than you have.
10. Cairo is the (old) city in the world.

**ANSWER KEY**

**Lesson 1**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>B</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>clever</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>new, green</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>large, busy</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>sweet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>new</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>some, my</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>many</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>fine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>that</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>much</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>small/beautiful</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>four</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>big</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>old</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>her</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>this/that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>much</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>which</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>high</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>useful</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Lesson 2**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>B</th>
<th>fast train</th>
<th>green field</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>handsome boy</td>
<td>hot tea</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>old city</td>
<td>pretty girl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>sharp knife</td>
<td>tall tree</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>wide river</td>
<td>wild animal</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>C</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>big</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>good</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>kind</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>old</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>great/famous</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>intelligent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>blue</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>noble/strong</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>brave</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>fast</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### SSC Programme

#### Lesson 4

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>E</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>few</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>sixty four</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>enough</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>All</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>F</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>much</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>many</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>much</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>many</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>G</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>any</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>any</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>some</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>some</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>I</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>This</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Those</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Those</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Those</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>K</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>What</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>What</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Which</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Which</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>M</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>their</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>his</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>her</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>N</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>That is my book.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>This is her pencil.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Those are their books.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>This is his umbrella.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>These are our toys.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>P</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>either</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Every</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Each</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>either</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>each</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Lesson 4*

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>E</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>as, as</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>than</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>the, of</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>than</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>F</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>as good as</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>finer</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>biggest</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>most useful</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>less</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
UNIT 13

Adverbs

LESSON 1

What is an Adverb

A The man walks slowly.
The boy is extremely happy.
The horse runs very fast.

B Find out the adverbs in the following sentences.
1. The bird sings sweetly.
2. He is very happy.
3. They work very hard.
4. She can sing well.
5. The children are shouting happily.
6. The soldiers fought bravely.
7. They are running fast.
8. The teacher speaks softly.
9. Shahana can dance beautifully.
10. The bottle was quite empty.

C Fill in the blanks with the adverbs given in the list.

always fast just regularly slowly
suddenly today very well yet

1. He ran _ _ _ _ and won the race.
2. The man is _ _ _ _ _ kind and he helps the poor people.
3. He can play football very _ _ _ _ _ .
4. He _ _ _ _ _ decided to leave the country.
5. Look! A man is climbing the tree _ _ _ _ _ .
Kinds of Adverbs

A Adverb of manner
He runs quickly.
She sings sweetly.
He works hard.

B Adverb of place
He came here.
She went there.
He has gone out.

C Adverb of time
He went home yesterday.
I am doing my homework now.
He will return soon.

D Adverb of frequency
He often comes here.
She always speaks the truth.
He is never late for school.

E Sentence adverb
Surely that is Kamal over there?
Unfortunately, he could not pass the exam.
Fortunately, he was unhurt in the accident.
Adverb of degree
He ran very quickly.
The man is too old to walk.
He nearly died.

Position of Adverbs

A Mid-position
He never tells a lie.
She always speaks the truth.
The picture is very beautiful.

B End-position
I like it too.
I don't like it either.
He reads newspaper daily.

C Initial-position
Perhaps it's going to rain.
Surely you don't think she's beautiful?
Sometimes I go shopping.
Actually you're mistaken.

Do you often come here?
SSC Programme

Do you come here often?
Comparison of Adverbs

Adjective এর মতো adverb এরও degrees of comparison রয়েছে। তবে শুধু adverbs of manner এবং কোনো কোনো ক্ষেত্রে adverb of time এর comparative ও superlative degree হয়ে থাকে।

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Positive</th>
<th>Comparative</th>
<th>Superlative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(i)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fast</td>
<td>faster</td>
<td>fastest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hard</td>
<td>harder</td>
<td>hardest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>high</td>
<td>higher</td>
<td>highest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>early</td>
<td>earlier</td>
<td>earliest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>soon</td>
<td>sooner</td>
<td>soonest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ii)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>beautifully</td>
<td>more beautifully</td>
<td>most beautifully</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bravely</td>
<td>more bravely</td>
<td>most bravely</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>easily</td>
<td>more easily</td>
<td>most easily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>happily</td>
<td>more happily</td>
<td>most happily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>loudly</td>
<td>more loudly</td>
<td>most loudly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>slowly</td>
<td>more slowly</td>
<td>most slowly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>softly</td>
<td>more softly</td>
<td>most softly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quickly</td>
<td>more quickly</td>
<td>most quickly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quietly</td>
<td>more quietly</td>
<td>most quietly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(iii)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>badly</td>
<td>worse</td>
<td>worst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>well</td>
<td>better</td>
<td>best</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Find out the adverbs in the following sentences and say what kind each one is.

1. He can swim well.
2. Where are you going now?
3. May I come in, Sir?
4. I am too tired to walk.
5. It is raining hard.
6. When will you come here?
7. He is quite a good swimmer.
8. The children are playing happily.
9. Sometimes I walk to school.
Fill in the blanks with suitable **adverbs**.

never, yet, too, always, often, certainly, very, out

1. The sun _ _ _ _ rises in the east.
2. He is _ _ _ _ ill to go to school.
3. Selim is a good boy. He _ _ _ _ tells a lie.
4. I cannot walk longer. I am _ _ _ _ tired.
5. It _ _ _ _ rains during the rainy season.
6. Don't go _ _ _ _ into the rain.
7. She studies very hard. She will _ _ _ _ do well in the exam.
8. It is almost evening. He has not _ _ _ _ returned home.

Put the adverbs into their correct **degrees**.
(positive, comparative or superlative).

1. She works (hard) than you.
2. He can walk (quickly) than me.
3. She sings (badly) than her sister.
4. The (long) I can stay here is three hours.
5. Could you talk a bit (quietly), please?
6. You are always tired in the mornings. You should go to bed (early).
7. Could you speak a little (slowly)?
8. The more you practise your English the (fast) you will learn.
9. I can run as (fast) as you.
10. I will come back as (soon) as I can.
**Lesson 1**

**B**
1. sweetly  
2. very  
3. very, hard  
4. well  
5. happily  
6. bravely  
7. fast  
8. softly  
9. beautifully  
10. quite  

**C**
1. fast  
2. very  
3. well  
4. suddenly  
5. slowly  

**Lesson 4**

**B**
1. well : adverb of manner  
2. now : adverb of time  
3. in : adverb of place  
4. too : adverb of degree  
5. hard : adverb of manner  
6. here : adverb of place  
7. quite : adverb of degree  
8. happily : adverb of manner  
9. sometimes : adverb of frequency  

**C**
1. always  
2. too  
3. never  
4. very  
5. often  
6. out  
7. certainly  
8. yet  

**D**
1. harder  
2. more quickly  
3. worse  
4. longest  
5. more quietly  
6. earlier  
7. more slowly  
8. faster  
9. as fast as  
10. as soon as
UNIT 14

Informal Letters

LESSON 1

1 Reza writes a letter to Paul, telling him about himself.

A Read this letter.

House 23, Road 20
Banani, Dhaka 1213
Bangladesh
15 September 1994

Dear Paul,

I got your address from a daily newspaper. You said you would like to be a pen-friend to a Bangladeshi boy. I’m writing this letter to tell you that I would like to be your pen-friend.

My name is Rezaul Karim. I’m 15 years old. My father is a shopkeeper and my mother teaches at a primary school. I work at my father’s shop. I have a sister. She is 12 years old. She is in class 7.

Well, all this is about me for now. What about you? Please write to me soon. Tell me all about yourself.

Yours sincerely,

Reza

By Air Mail

From:
Reza
Bangladesh

Stamp

Paul Adams
29 Southgate Rd
N1, London
UK
Read and note.

address — ঠিকানা
pen-friend — চিঠির মাধ্যমে বন্ধু। pen-friend সাধারণত বিদেশী হয়।
for now — এখনকার মতো
what about you? — আপনার কথা বলুন অথবা আপনি নিজের সম্পর্কে বলুন।
yours sincerely — আপনার একাংশ

Answer these questions, first orally then in writing.  
(এই প্রশ্নগুলোর উত্তর দিন। প্রথমে মুখে মুখে, পরে লিখিতভাবে।)
1 Where is the letter from?
2 When is it written?
3 Who is it written to?
4 Who is it from?
5 What is the receiver’s address?

Form 1

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>House 23</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Road 20</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Banani,</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Dhaka 1213</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Bangladesh</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>15 September 1994</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Dear Paul,</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>I got you address</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>---     ---     ---</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>---     ---     ---</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>---     ---     ---</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>---     ---     ---</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>yourself.</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Yours sincerely,</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Reza</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Paul Adams,</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>------------------</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>----------   UK</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---
Activities:

1. Suppose you have a pen-friend, Mary. She lives in Kathmandu, Nepal. Write a letter to her telling her about:
   a. your age
   b. your family
   c. your school/job
   d. where you live

2. Write a letter to your friend/pen-friend about yourself.
2 A reply from Paul

Read.

29 Southgate Road
N 1, London
UK

25 September 1994

Dear Reza,

Thank you for your letter of 15th September. I’m glad to be your pen-friend. I’m 16 years old. I’m a student of ‘O’level. My mother is a secretary. My father died when I was 10. He died in a car accident. I don’t have any brother or sister.

I’m interested in history and geography. I collect stamps and listen to music.

You didn’t tell me much about yourself. Why aren’t you studying? What are you interested in? Do you listen to western music? Please write about all these things. I’m also interested to know about the history of Bangladesh.

Yours sincerely,

Paul

B Read and note.

interested (in) — আগাহী
collect — সংগ্রহ করা
listen (to) — শোনা
western music — পশ্চাতোর গান, পশ্চাত্য সংগীত
Asma’s aunt, who is an American, wants to visit Bangladesh for the first time. She writes to Asma.

Read.

Apartment 12C
4th Street
New York 10020
USA

October 2, 1994

Dear Asma,

I’ve heard a lot about you and Bangladesh from your uncle. Now I’ve decided to visit Bangladesh. Your uncle also wants to see his family and friends. We will reach Dhaka on the 15th of next month.

I don’t have any clear idea about the climate of Bangladesh. Is it too hot in mid-November? What sort of clothes do I have to take? Also I want to buy some gifts. Give me some idea about who I should buy the gifts for? Please write me soon.

Looking forward to seeing you.

With love.

Yours,

Aunt Sophie

Read and note.

a lot — অনেক কিছু
decided (pt of decide) — ঠিক করেছি, সিদ্ধান্ত নিয়েছি
climate — জলবায়ু, অবহাওয়া
mid-November — মধ্য নভেম্বর, নভেম্বরের মাঝামাঝি
sort — ধরন
clothes — কী ধরনের কাপড়চাপড়
Dear Aunt Sophie,

Everybody here is excited by the news of your visit. It’s really very nice of you.

You don’t have to worry about clothes and other things. November is the best time of the year in Bangladesh. The weather is very pleasant then. It’s neither hot nor cold. Wet season is over. You don’t need to bring warm clothes.

About gifts, you don’t have to buy many. Just buy something special for Grandmother and Grandfather. For everybody else chocolates will be fine.

How is Uncle? Give him my regards.

Yours affectionately,

Asma
1 Arif is going to visit his uncle who lives in England. He wrote a letter to his uncle asking him if he wanted Arif to take anything for him from Bangladesh.

A Read.

29/D, Tipu Sultan Road
Dhaka

25 July 1994

Dear Uncle,

Thank you very much for sending me the ticket to London. Visiting England was a dream to me. Now it is going to come true.

Please let me know if you want me to take anything for you from Bangladesh. It is the season of mangoes. Very good quality mangoes are available. Apart from this what else can I get for you? Mum wants to give some home-made sweets and pickles. Shall I take them? Please let me know as early as possible. My flight is in the middle of next month.

Looking forward to seeing you.

Yours affectionately,

Arif

B Read and note.

a dream — একটি স্পন্দ
it is going to come true — এ স্পন্দ বাজাবে পরিণত হতে যাচ্ছে
are available — পাওয়া যায়
Apart from this — এ ছাড়া
home–made — ঘরে তৈরি
pickles — আচার
A reply from Arif’s uncle

Read.

26A, Cranley Gardens
Muswell Hill
London N10 3AP
UK

5 July 1994

Dear Arif,

I received your letter yesterday. I’m glad that I could make your dream come true. You are my only nephew. So your happiness makes me happy too.

I used to love juicy mangoes of Rajshahi. It’s been a long time since I ate some. Of course you should bring the home-made sweets and pickles. Your mum knows how much I love her pickles, especially if it is made of green mangoes.

I’ve made plans for your visit to interesting places in London. I’m sure you will enjoy every moment of your stay here.

With love.

Yours,

Uncle

Read and note.

received (pt of receive) — পেয়েছি
juicy — রসালো, মজার
stay — অবস্থান

Arif is in London. He wrote a letter to his mother telling her how he is
Dear Mother,

I reached London safely. Though the journey was long I enjoyed it. My friend’s elder brother also came by the same flight. Luckily he sat next to me. He lives in London. He also asked me to go to his place. I had a nice time.

Uncle’s apartment is in a quiet area in North London. It is not big. It has got two bedrooms, one living room, a small kitchen and a bathroom. Uncle does all the housework. Now I try to help him. But you know I’m not good at housework. Uncle can cook well. But now most of the time we eat out.

We are visiting many interesting places. I will write to you about these later.

Please don’t worry about me. I’m all right. How are you and Father? Uncle sends his regards to both of you.

With love.

Yours affectionately,

Arif.
You are going to visit your village home. Write a letter to your friend asking him to come with you and spend a few days in your village.

Read.

A

28 D, Bara Maghbazar
Dhaka

30 November 1994

Dear Razu,

I think your annual exam will be over soon. Mine will be over by the first week of the next month. After that I’m going to visit my village home. It’s in the Manikganj district which is not a long way from Dhaka. The road communication is good. It takes about 3 hours to reach my home. I haven’t been to my village since I was 5/6 years old. This time I’ve made up my mind to spend my winter holidays at my village. My grandparents live there.

I want you to come with me. We will do a lot of things together. None of my uncles or cousins are at the village now. So I need someone to share everything with me. We will enjoy home-made village cakes and other local things.

Please let me know as soon as possible if you can come with me. Give my regards to Uncle and Aunty and love to Rana.

Sincerely yours,

Saif

B Read and note.

- exam — examination
- road communication — সড়ক যোগাযোগ
- I’ve made up my mind — তিক করেছি
- share — এক সাথে উপভোগ করা

Write a letter to your friend, who recently left Bangladesh, giving him an
account of the prize-giving ceremony of your school.

A  Read.

37 Station Road
Po & Dist. Jamalpur
Bangladesh
2 January 1995

Dear Rumi,

Hope you’ve made new friends at your new school. Last Sunday was the prize-giving ceremony of our school. We missed you.

This time the ceremony was held in the afternoon. So most of the guardians could attend the ceremony. After the prize distribution, a cultural show was held as usual. We missed your Rabindra Sangeet. We acted out a short play which was enjoyed by all. We had great fun.

I got three books of Humayun Ahmed for being the top girl in the class. I wish you could read the books.

Write me soon.

Yours ever,

Salma

B  Read and note.

missed you — তোমার কথা খুব করে মনে পড়েছে
attend — যোগান করা
distribution — বিতরণ
acted out — অভিনয় করেছি
short play — নাট্যকর্ম
fun — মজা

3  Your brother wants to give you a present on your brilliant success at the SSC examination. Write a letter asking him to buy you an English-to-English dictionary.

A  Read.

Dhanikhola
Munshiganj
25 September 1995

Dear Brother,

Thanks for your letter of congratulations. Nobody ever wrote me such a nice letter. I showed it to all my friends. I’m very glad that you want to give me a present. You wanted to know what I would like to have. I would be very grateful if you would buy me an English-to-English dictionary. I badly need it.

Soon I’m going to be a college student. I’m really excited about that. When will you come home? We are all right here.
Your loving brother,
Asad

Read and note.

congratulations — অভিনন্দন
grateful — কৃতজ্ঞ
badly — খুব বেশি করে, লাগলে ভাবে

A C T I V I T I E S

1. Suppose you have a British friend. Write a letter to him inviting him to visit your country.
   Clues:
   (a) time
   (b) stay
   (c) duration

2. Your cousin who lives in Denmark and has never visited Bangladesh wants to know about the seasons of Bangladesh. Write a letter to him/her in reply.

3. Your friend wants to know what you are interested in. Write a letter to him/her about your interests.

4. Write a letter to your cousin telling him/her what you are going to study after SSC.

5. You are staying away from home for the first time. Write a letter to your elder sister about the new place and how you feel.

6. Write a letter to your pen-friend describing your home/school/parents/village/town/country.

7. Your uncle sent you a present on your success at the SSC Examination. Write a letter to him thanking him for the present. Use the following key words:
   a radio, small, expensive (মূল্যবান), longing for (আপাতে আগ্রহ, কিছু চান/করছি), to have one, benefit (উপকারিতা), thank you

8. Your sister is getting married. You want to give her a wedding present with your scholarship money. You cannot decide what to buy. Write a letter to your friend asking for his suggestion (প্রস্তাব, চিন্তা করুন).
UNIT 15

LESSON 1

Using Nouns, Pronouns, Adjectives, Verbs, Adverbs, Prepositions and Conjunctions

Read the following passage.

Passage 1

कऱीम आमार बछु। से भालो छेल। से प्रतिदिन खुलौ याय। से नियमित लेखापडा करे। सवाइ ताकेखुब भालोबासेय।

Put a tick against the correct answer.
The first one is done for you.

1  कऱीम आमार बछु।
   a) Karim is my friend. (√)
   b) Karim my friend.
   c) Karim my friend.
   d) Karim was my friend.

2  से भालो छेल।
   a) He was a good boy.
   b) He has a good boy.
   c) He can be a good boy.
   d) He is a good boy.

3  से प्रतिदिन खुलौ याय।
   a) He go to school everyday.
   b) He goes to school everyday.
   c) He went to school everyday.
   d) He will go to school everyday.

4  से नियमित लेखापडा करे।
   a)
   b)
   c)
   d)
SSC Programme

5 Everybody love him.
   a) Everybody love him.
   b) All loved him.
   c) All love him.
   d) All loves him.

B Read the following passage.

Word Meanings:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>প্রভূতভক্ত</th>
<th>faithful</th>
<th>দাত</th>
<th>fast</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>প্রণী</td>
<td>animal</td>
<td>ধারাল</td>
<td>sharp</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>দাত</td>
<td>teeth</td>
<td>নখ</td>
<td>claws</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>মাংস</td>
<td>meat</td>
<td>সিনের বেলা</td>
<td>by day</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Now put suitable words in the blanks.

1 কুকুর প্রভূতভক্ত প্রণী। এর দাত এবং নখ খুব ধারাল। এরা ভাত, মাছ ও মাংস খায়। কুকুর দাত
   দৌড়তে পারে। এরা সিনের বেলা ঘুমায়।

The dog is a _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ animal.

2 এর দাত এবং নখ খুব ধারাল।
   Its _ _ _ _ _ _ and _ _ _ _ _ _ are very _ _ _ _ _ _ .

3 এরা ভাত মাছ ও মাংস খায়।
   It _ _ _ _ _ _ rice, fish and meat.

4 কুকুর খুব দাত দৌড়তে পারে।
   The dog can _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ very _ _ _ _ _ .

5 এরা সিনের বেলা ঘুমায়।
   It _ _ _ _ _ _ by day.

C Read the following passage.

Passage 3

বশীর আমার সবচেয়ে প্রিয় বন্ধ। আমার নবম শ্রেণীতে পড়ি। বশীর ভালোবাসত। সে প্রতিদিন চার
   দিন পড়ানো করে। আমরা একসাথে পেলাঙ্কা করি।
Put the words in correct order.

1. कबीर आमार सबচেয়ে প্রিয় বন্ধু
   is my friend dearest Kabir

2. আমরা নবম শ্রেণীতে পড়ি
   nine class in are we

3. কবীর ভালো ছাত্
   student a good Kabir is

4. সে প্রতিদিন চার ঘণ্টা পড়াশুনা করে
   everyday four studies hours he for

5. আমরা একসাথে খেলাধুলা করি
   together play we

Read the following passage.

Passage 4

আমরা বাংলাদেশী। আমরা বাংলাদেশে বাস করি (live in)। কাজী নজরুল ইসলাম আমাদের জাতীয় কবি (national poet)। তিনি আমাদের প্রেম (pride).

Now try to translate the passage into English.

Read the Following Passage

Passage 5

বিড়াল একটি পোষা (pet) প্রাণী। শিতলা বিড়াল ভালোবাসে। এরা শিতলার সঙ্গে খেলে। বিড়াল
dুঃখ ও মাছ খুঁছ পছন্দ করে (is very fond of).

Now try to translate the passage into English.
Introducing Tenses

1 Using Present Indefinite Tense, Past Indefinite Tense and Future Indefinite Tense.

A Read the following passage.

Passage 1

Translate the passage into English.
The first two sentences are done for you.
Yesterday I was sick. So I could not go to school.

B Read the passage below.

Passage 2

The first sentence is done for you.
Have you ever been to Dhaka?
Now put a tick mark against the correct answers in the rest of the sentences.
1 एটি एकটি সুন্দর শহর
a) It is beautiful city.
b) It is a beautiful city.
c) Dhaka is a nice city.
d) Dhaka is a beautiful city.

2 সেখানে আমার মামা থাকেন।
a) My maternal uncle lives there.
b) My maternal uncle is living there.
c) My maternal uncle has lived there.
d) My maternal uncle live there.
3. a) I have gone to his house last year.
   b) I go to his house last year.
   c) I went to his house last year.
   d) I had gone to his house last year.

4. a) I shall go there next winter.
   b) I go there this winter.
   c) I shall go there this winter.
   d) I shall again go there next winter.

5. a) Should you go with me?
   b) Will you go with me?
   c) Will you accompanied me?
   d) Shall you be with me?

2. Using Present Perfect Tense and Present Perfect Continuous Tense.

C. Read the following passage.

Passage 3
কামাল মাঠে ফুটবল খেলে গিয়েছে। সে এখনও বাড়ি ফেরেনি (returned home)। সে দুই টর্নামেন্টের মধ্যে ফুটবল খেলেছে। আগামী মাসে তার দ্বিতীয় পার্টির পরিকল্পনা (second terminal examination) শুরু হবে। তার নির্মিত (regularly) লেখাপড়া করা উচিত।

Now try to translate the passage into English.

D. Read the following passage.

Passage 4
আমার ভাই ঢাকায় আছেন (stays)। কয়েকদিন আগে (a few days back) তিনি একটি চাকরি (job) পেয়েছেন। গতকাল আমার তার একটি চিঠি পেয়েছি (received)। তিনি আগামী মাসে বাড়ি আসবেন।

Now try to translate the passage into English.

E. Read the passage below.

Passage 5
এইমাত্র (just now) দুটি বোধ হয়। ছাত্র শ্রেষ্ঠতা থেকে বের হয়ে আসছে। এখন সবাই বাড়ি যাবে। আগামিকাল সকালে আবার তারা স্কুলে আসবে।

Try to translate the passage into English.
LESSON 3

Types of Sentences

1 Making statements, questions and requests.

A Read the following passage.

Passage 1

Fill in the blanks with suitable words.

1 তোমার নাম কি? your name?
2 তুমি কোথায় থাকে? you live?
3 তুমি কোনো ক্লাসে পড়ে? What class in?
4 আমার নাম রঘব। My 
5 আমি নবম শ্রেণীতে পড়ি। I am 
6 আমাদের বাড়িতে এসো। Come to 

B Read the following passage.

Passage 2

The first sentence is done for you.

মন দিয়ে (attentively) লেখাপড়া কর। তোমার পরীক্ষা করে আরো হবে (start, commence)? এখন তোমার নিয়মিত (regularly) লেখাপড়া করা উচিত। ভালো ছাত্রা নিয়মিত লেখাপড়া করে।

Study attentively.

Now try to translate the rest of the sentences into English.

C Read the passage below.

Passage 3

সব সময় (always) সত্য কথা বলবে। কখনও (never) মিথ্যা বলবে না। সত্যবাদীকে (a truthful man) সবাই ভালোবাসবে। মিথ্যাবাদীকে (a liar) সবাই যুগ্ম করে (hate).

Translate the passage into English.
Passages for Practice

A
Read the passage below.

Passage 1

Sara is a very good girl. In class four, she regularly goes to school. She learns her everyday lessons. She obeyed her elders and never tells lies. She does not quarrel with anybody. She loves everybody.

Now try to put the words in the correct order.

1. Sara very good girl a is
2. in class four is she
3. regularly goes she school to
4. learns she her everyday lessons
5. obeys she elders her
6. never she tells lies
7. quarrel she does not anybody with
8. her loves everybody

B
Read the passage below.

Passage 2

Shahed is a good boy. His father is poor. He reads in class six. He never quarrels with anybody. He loves everybody.

Pick out the correct answers and put a tick mark against them.

1. Shahed is good.
2. Shahed is a good boy.
3. His father is poor.
4. His father was very poor.
5. He reads in class six.
6. He is in class six.
7. He was in class six.

Translation
SSC Programme

4   সে মন দিয়ে লেখাপড়া করে।
   a)  He study attentively.
   b)  He studies attentively.
   c)  He read attentively
   d)  He reads attentively.
5   অনসর সময়ে সে মা বাবা কে সাহায্য করে।
   a)  At his leisure he helps his parents.
   b)  In his rest he helps his parents.
   c)  He helps his parents at rest time.
   d)  He helps his father and mother at rest.
6   সে শিক্ষককের শাস্তি করে।
   a)  He respects his teacher.
   b)  He would respect his teachers.
   c)  He respected his teachers.
   d)  He respects his teachers.

C  Read the passage below.

**Passage 3**

আমরা ঢাকায় বাস করি। এটি একটি পূর্ণনো শহর। এটি বাংলাদেশের রাজধানী (capital)। এটি
একটি জনবহুল (populous) শহর। এই শহরে অনেক মসজিদ আছে। একে মসজিদের শহর
(city of mosques) বলা হয়।

Fill in the blanks with suitable words.

1  আমরা ঢাকায় বাস করি।
   We _ _ _ _ _ in Dhaka.
2  এটি একটি পূর্ণনো শহর।
   It _ _ _ _ _ old city.
3  এটি বাংলাদেশের রাজধানী।
   It _ _ _ _ _ the capital _ _ _ _ _ Bangladesh.
4  এটি একটি জনবহুল শহর।
   It is _ _ _ _ _ city.
5  এই শহরে অনেক মসজিদ আছে।
   There are _ _ _ _ mosques in _ _ _ _ city.
6  একে মসজিদের শহর (city of mosques) বলা হয়।
   It _ _ _ _ _ called the city _ _ _ _ _ mosques.

D  Read the following passage.

**Passage 4**

পূর্ব দিকে (in the east) ওঠে (rises) এবং পশ্চিম দিকে (in the west) আসে (sets)। সূর্য থেকে আমরা তাপ (heat) ও আলো (light) পাই। সূর্য দিন ও রাত্রি আনে (brings).

Now try to translate the passage into English.
Read the following passage.

Passage 5

বোলাপ একটি সুন্দর ফুল। এটির মিটি গন্ধ (sweet smell) আছে। গোলাপের রঙ অত্যন্ত মনোমুগ্ধকর (charming)। প্রতোকেই (everybody) গোলাপ পছন্দ করে। গোলাপকে ফুলের রানী (queen of flowers) বলা হয় (called).

Try to translate the passage into English.

LESSON 5

More Passages for Practice

A Read the passage below.

Passage 1

আমাদের দেশের নাম বাংলাদেশ। এর রাজধানী ঢাকা। বাংলাদেশ খুব সুন্দর। এদেশে ছয়টি সংবাদ (season) আছে। প্রথমের সংবাদ (king of seasons) বলা হয়। পাঁচ এবং তৃতীয় বাংলাদেশের প্রধান অর্থনীতি ফসল (main cash crop)।

Try to translate the passage into English.

B Read the passage.

Passage 2

বাগান করা আমার সখ। আমার নিজের একটি বাগান আছে। আমি এতে ফুল জন্মাই। প্রতোকেই বিকালের আমি এখানে কাজ করি। আমার বাগানে হারেক রকম ফুল আছে।

Put a tick mark against the correct answer.

1  বাগান করা আমার সখ।
   a) Garden is my hobby.
   b) To garden is my hobby.
   c) My hobby is gardener.
   d) Gardening is my hobby.

2  আমার নিজের একটি বাগান আছে।
   a) I have a garden of my own.
   b) I shall have a garden of my own.
   c) I had a garden of my own.
   d) I will have a garden of my own.

3  আমি এতে ফুল জন্মাই।
   a) I grew flowers in it.
   b) I grow flowers in it.
   c) I have produced flowers in it.
   d) I cultivated flowers in it.
SSC Programme

4 প্রতিকর্ণ বিকালে আমি এখানে কাজ করি।
   a) I work here every evening.
   b) I work here everyday evening.
   c) I work here every afternoon.
   d) I work here everyday afternoon.

5 আমার বাগানে হরেক রকম ফুল আছে।
   a) There are different flowers in my garden.
   b) In my garden are different flowers.
   c) There are many flowers in my garden.
   d) There are various kinds of flowers in my garden.

C Read the passage.

Passage 3

আম সবই ভালোবাসে। আম সুনিবি (sweet) ফল। বাংলাদেশে অনেক রকম ফল আছে। সব
ফলের মধ্যে (of all fruits) আমই শ্রেষ্ঠ (the best)। এই ফল অত্যন্ত পুষ্টিকর
(nutritious)।

Now try to translate it into English.

D Read the passage below.

Passage 4

ভোর হয়েছে। সূর্য উঠেছে। পাখিরা কিতরিমিটির করছে। মৃদু বাতাস বইছে। ঘুম থেকে ওঠ। হাত
মুখ খোঁদ। পড়তে বস।

Put the words in the correct order.

1 ভোর হয়েছে।
   It morning is.
2 সূর্য উঠেছে।
   has the sun risen.
3 পাখিরা কিতরিমিটির করছে।
   twittering birds are.
4 মৃদু বাতাস বইছে।
   is blowing gentle breeze a.
5 ঘুম থেকে ওঠ।
   from bed up get.
6 হাত মুখ খোঁদ।
   face hands wash your and.
7 পড়তে বস।
   to study sit down.
Read the passage.

**Passage 5**

পানি প্রয়োজনীয় পদার্থ (useful substance)। এটি তরল (liquid)। এর কোনো রং নেই।
আমারা বিভিন্ন (different) উৎস (sources) থেকে পানি পেয়ে থাকি।

Now try to translate it into English.

**ANSWER KEY**

**Lesson 1**

**A** (Tick against)
1 (a) 2 (d) 3 (b) 4 (c)

**B** (Put in the blanks)
1 faithful 2 teeth, claws, sharp 3 eats
4 run, fast 5 sleeps

**C** (Correct orders)
1 Kabir is my dearest friend.
2 We are in class nine.
3 Kabir is a good student.
4 He studies for four hours everyday.
5 We play together.

**D** (Translate as)
We are Bangladeshi. We live in Bangladesh. Kazi Nazrul Islam is our national poet. He is our pride.

**E** (Translate as)
The cat is a pet animal. Children love the cat. It plays with children. The cat is very fond of milk and fish.

**Lesson 2**

**A** (Translation of the remaining sentences:)
Today I feel well. Now I shall go to school. Our annual examination will start from next week.

**B** (Tick against)
1 (b) 2 (a) 3 (c) 4 (d) 5 (b)

**C** (Answer can be varied. A typical answer is:)
Kamal has gone to field to play football. He has not returned home
yet. He has been playing football for two hours. His second terminal examination will start from next month. He should study regularly.

D (One typical translation of the passage may be:)
My brother stays in Dhaka. A few days back he got a job. We received a letter from him yesterday. He will come home next month.

E (One typical translation of the passage may be:)
The bell has rung just now. The students are coming out of the classroom. All will go home now. The next morning they will come to school again.

Lesson 3
A (Fill in the blanks)
1 What is
2 Where do
3 are you
4 name is Rakib.
5 in class nine.
6 our house.

B (The rest of the sentences can be translated as:)
When will your examination start? Now you should study regularly. Good students study regularly.

C (The passage can be translated as:)
Always speak the truth. Never tell a lie. Everybody loves a truthful man. All hate a liar.

Lesson 4
A (Correct order)
1 Sara is a very good girl.
2 She is in class four.
3 She goes to school regularly.
4 She learns her lessons everyday.
5 She obeys her elders.
6 She never tells lies.
7 She does not quarrel with anybody.
8 Everybody loves her.

B (Tick against)
1 (d) 2 (c) 3 (c) 4 (b) 5 (a) 6 (d)
C (Fill in the blanks)
1 live 2 is an 3 is, of
4 a populous 5 many, this 6 is, of

D (The passage can be translated as:)
The sun rises in the east and sets in the west. We get heat and light from the sun. The sun brings day and night.

E (The passage can be translated as)
The rose is a beautiful flower. It has sweet smell. The colour of the rose is very charming. Everybody likes the rose. The rose is called the queen of flowers.

Lesson 5
A (Translation of the passage can be)
The name of our country is Bangladesh. Its capital is Dhaka. Bangladesh is very beautiful. There are six seasons in this country. The spring is called the king of seasons. Jute and tea are the main cash crops of Bangladesh.

B (Tick against)
1 (d) 2 (a) 3 (b) 4 (c) 5 (d)

C (One form of translation of the passage is:)
Everybody is fond of mango. Mango is a sweet fruit. There are many kinds of fruits in Bangladesh. Mango is the best of all fruits. This fruit is very nutritious.

D (Correct order)
1 It is morning.
2 The sun has risen.
3 Birds are twittering.
4 A gentle breeze is blowing.
5 Get up from bed.
6 Wash your face and hands.
7 Sit down to study.

E (One form of translation of the passage is:)
Water is a useful substance. It is liquid. It has no colour. We get water from different sources.
Sample Questions for SSC (1602) 1st Paper next examination

English (Compulsory)

First Paper

SSC–1602

Time : 3 hours Full Marks : 100

[N.B. The figures in the margin indicate full marks]

Part–A : Seen Comprehension

Read the passage below and answer questions from 1 to 5:

Nishu was travelling by train from Dhaka to Chittagong. She was carrying a big suitcase and a bag of gifts for her mother, four brothers and three sisters. She had come from New York, USA to attend the wedding of her younger brother, Maqsood.

The train started moving. Nishu could see the trees, the green paddy fields and some little boys fishing. They all seemed to run in the opposite direction. Nishu wanted to be a little more comfortable. She could not find room for her feet because her bag was in the way. She tried to move it, but it was too heavy. She asked the man on the other seat to help her.

"Excuse me. Please could you put my bag on the upper berth, there?" She said, the man readily agreed "Sure", he replied. Then he lifted the bag up and put it on the berth. Nishu thanked him and asked his name. "Kamal", he said.

Nishu and Kamal talked for quite sometime. At one stage of their conversation, they discovered they were related. Kamal was a distant cousin to Nishu. He was a close friend of her uncle, Eshan. He asked Nishu, "Could you give me Eshan's address please, I haven't seen him for ages." "Oh sure", came the prompt reply. Nishu then took out her diary from her bag and gave him the address.

1. Choose the best answer to complete each sentence : 1\times5=5
   (a) Nishu was travelling by train from Chittagong / Rajshahi / Dhaka to Chittagong.
   (b) Nishu and Kamal discovered / thought / understood they were related.
   (c) She took out her pen / diary / book from her bag.
   (d) She wanted to be much / a little more / enough comfortable.
   (e) They all seemed to run / move / walk in the opposite direction.

2. Write whether the following statements are true or false : 1\times5=5
   (a) Nishu could not find room for her feet.
   (b) She could see the trees and some little boys fishing.
   (c) Kamal was a close cousin to Nishu.
   (d) Nishu refused to give him the address.
   (e) Nishu came from UK to attend the wedding.
3. Fill in the gaps with the correct form of the words in brackets. Add any preposition if necessary:  
(a) Nishu (give) __________ him the address.  
(b) The man (lift) ______ the bag up.  
(c) The train started (move) _______.  
(d) Nishu was (carry) _______ a big suitcase.  
(e) She saw some little boys (fish) _______.  

4. Answer each of the following questions in one complete sentence:  
(a) Why did Nishu come from New York?  
(b) What things were she carrying for her mother?  
(c) Why didn't Nishu find room for her feet?  
(d) How did Nishu and Kamal discover they were related?  
(e) Who was a close friend of her uncle, Eshan?  

5. Summerise the central idea of the above passage in five sentences:  

Part—B: Grammar  

6. Fill in the gaps with the right form of the words in brackets (any ten):  
(a) The phone (ring) ________ when I (eat) ________ breakfast.  
(b) Last night I (write) ______ a letter to my friend.  
(c) Please don't disturb me. I (study) ___________.  
(d) I am so tired. I think I (go) _____ to bed now.  
(e) What (will/shall) _________ you have for breakfast?  
(f) I am sure it (am/is/are +going to) ________ be great fun.  
(g) You (should / shouldn't) ________ run carelessly.  
(h) Deepa can't read the blackboard. She (has to / have to / had to) ________ wear glasses.  
(i) I (do / does / did + have to) ______ go to Gazipur everyday.  
(j) He is (a/am) ______ honourable man.  
(k) (The / an / a) ____ earth goes round (a/an/the) _____ sun.  
(l) That big house is (they / theirs) ___________.  
(m) The girl washed (herself/myself)____________.  

7. Re-arrange the following words to make meaningful sentences:  
(a) city, in, Dhaka, the, Bangladesh, biggest, is.  
(b) family, has, a, Mrs Amin, small.  
(c) average, what, income, is, your?  
(d) see, me, you, not, need.  
(e) here, a man, yesterday, came.  

8. Translate into English:  

Sample Question
Part—C : Vocabulary

9. Match the words in Column A with the words nearest in meaning from column B:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A</th>
<th>B</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(a) annual</td>
<td>(a) various</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) honour</td>
<td>(b) rough voice</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) different</td>
<td>(c) yearly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) for ages</td>
<td>(d) a cutting instrument with two blades</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) discovered</td>
<td>(e) respect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) harsh tone</td>
<td>(f) battle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) venue</td>
<td>(g) young tree</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) sapling</td>
<td>(h) for a very long time</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) war</td>
<td>(i) found out / came to know</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(j) scissors</td>
<td>(j) place where something happens.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

10. Fill in each gap with a suitable word from the box (Make any grammatical changes if necessary):

One night the caliph was (a) _______ along as usual. Suddenly he (b) ____ some noise (c) ______ he was passing by a hut. He (d) ______ near the hut and found that (e) ______ children were sitting around a big pot. Their mother (f) ______ somthing is the pot. The children (g) ____ hungry and they were crying for food. What are you cooking?" the caliph (h) ______. The woman (i) _____ at his face helplessly and did not (j) ___________ anything.

Part—D : Writing

11. Read the following table and make five sensible sentences. Write out the sentences in full:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>A</th>
<th>B</th>
<th>C</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>You should not</td>
<td>can drive</td>
<td>dirty hands</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b)</td>
<td>Enamul must not</td>
<td>eat with</td>
<td>at a time</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c)</td>
<td>Shamim</td>
<td>is a</td>
<td>a long way</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d)</td>
<td>Ataul</td>
<td>eat too much</td>
<td>beautiful pictures</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e)</td>
<td>Nurul</td>
<td>can paint</td>
<td>good teacher</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

12. You are going to visit your village home. Write a letter to your friend asking him to come with you and spend a few days in your village.

14. Write a paragraph on "Gardening" in about 100 words by answering the following questions:

(a) What is gardening?
(b) What kinds of gardening are done?
(c) What is the utility of gardening?
(d) What should you do to make a beautiful garden?
(e) How do you feel working in a garden?